

# **The Islamic State**

*(Al-Dowlah Islamia)*

*Taqiuddin an-Nabahani*

*Hizb ut-Tahrir*

*1953*

## **Contents**

<b>1. Introduction</b>	<b>4</b>
<b>2. The Starting Point</b>	<b>6</b>
<b>3. The Structuring Of The Sahabah</b>	<b>7</b>
<b>4. The Launching Of The Call</b>	<b>8</b>
<b>5. Hostility Against The Call</b>	<b>9</b>
<b>6. The Interaction Of The Call</b>	<b>13</b>
<b>7. The Two Stages Of The Call</b>	<b>16</b>
<b>8. The Expansion Of The Call</b>	<b>19</b>
<b>9. The First Pledge Of Al-'Aqabah</b>	<b>20</b>
<b>10. The Call In Madinah</b>	<b>21</b>
<b>11. The Second Pledge Of Al-'Aqabah</b>	<b>23</b>
<b>12. Establishing The Islamic State</b>	<b>28</b>
<b>13. Establishing The Society</b>	<b>29</b>
<b>14. The Preparation For Fighting</b>	<b>32</b>
<b>15. The Outbreak Of Fighting</b>	<b>34</b>
<b>16. Life In Madinah</b>	<b>36</b>
<b>17. Arguments Of The Jews And Christians</b>	<b>37</b>
<b>18. The Battle Of Badr</b>	<b>39</b>
<b>19. The Expulsion Of Banu Qaynuqa'</b>	<b>41</b>
<b>20. Quelling Internal Disorder</b>	<b>42</b>
<b>21. The Battle Of Al-Ahzab</b>	<b>46</b>
<b>22. The Treaty Of Al-Hudaybiyah</b>	<b>51</b>
<b>23. The Raid On Khaybar</b>	<b>57</b>
<b>24. Envoys To The Neighbouring Countries</b>	<b>58</b>
<b>25. The Battle Of Mu'tah</b>	<b>60</b>
<b>26. The Conquest Of Makkah</b>	<b>62</b>
<b>27. The Battle Of Hunayn</b>	<b>65</b>
<b>28. The Raid On Tabuk</b>	<b>69</b>
<b>29. The Dominance Of The Islamic State Over The Arabian Peninsula</b>	<b>72</b>
<b>30. The Structure Of The Islamic State</b>	<b>74</b>
<b>31. The Jewish Attitude Towards The Islamic State</b>	<b>77</b>
<b>32. The Continuity Of The Islamic State</b>	<b>80</b>
<b>33. The Internal Policy Of The Islamic State</b>	<b>83</b>
<b>34. The Foreign Policy Of The Islamic State</b>	<b>87</b>
<b>35. The Islamic Conquests Are To Spread Islam</b>	<b>90</b>
<b>36. Consolidation Of The Islamic Conquests</b>	<b>92</b>
<b>37. Moulding Peoples Together Into One Ummah</b>	<b>95</b>

<i>38. The Causes Of The Islamic State's Weakness</i>	<i>99</i>
<i>39. The Disintegration Of The Islamic State</i>	<i>103</i>
<i>40. The Missionary Invasion</i>	<i>108</i>
<i>41. The Crusaders' Animosity</i>	<i>114</i>
<i>42. The Effects Of The Missionary Invasion</i>	<i>117</i>
<i>43. The Political Invasion Of The Islamic World</i>	<i>121</i>
<i>44. The Destruction Of The Islamic State</i>	<i>124</i>
<i>45. Preventing Re-Establishment Of The Islamic State</i>	<i>131</i>
<i>46. Establishing The Islamic State Is A Duty Upon All Muslims</i>	<i>136</i>
<i>47. Difficulties Facing The Re-Establishment Of The Islamic State</i>	<i>139</i>
<i>48. How the Islamic State Would Rise</i>	<i>144</i>

For exact meanings of words and sentences, please refer to the original Arabic book al-Dowla al-Islamiyah.

[TMQ is Translation of the Meaning of Qur'an]

## 1. Introduction

The present generation does not recall the Islamic State that implemented Islam, and those who lived during the last years of the Islamic State ('Uthmani Khilafah) against which the West had directed its onslaught, had in fact witnessed the remains of a state implementing remnants of Islamic rule. That is why it has become extremely difficult for any Muslim to illustrate the picture of the Islamic rule to minds subdued by the situation, minds which cannot imagine the system of government except through the rotten democratic regimes imposed on Muslim countries.

And this is not the only hardship, rather the hardest task is trying to change such minds which have been seduced by the Western culture. The Western culture was the dagger drawn by the West in the face of the Islamic State, and by which it fatally stabbed her. Then, taking the weapon, dripping with blood, to her sons proudly said to them: I have killed your ailing mother, who deserved to be killed because of her poor guardianship and mismanagement and I have reserved for you the kind of life in which you will relish happiness and prosperity. They then offered to shake the hand of the murderer whose dagger was still stained with the blood of their mother. This, it is claimed, is just what the hyena does to its prey. The prey stands still, stunned and astonished, and does not come back to its senses until it is dealt a hard blow that makes it bleed, or is taken down the valley to be eaten.

So how could such seduced minds realise that the poisonous dagger which killed their mother is the same one that is always threatening their lives and very existence, so long as they hold onto it. That those concepts which they carry, such as nationalism, separating the deen from the State and the anti-Islamic notions are the very poison that this Western culture has brought to them. The chapter about the missionary invasion in this book is full of facts and figures showing clearly and in detail the true intentions of the killer and the true motives behind the crime, listing the means and methods used to carry it out. The only reason was to eradicate Islam, and the most effective weapon was this Western culture which the missionary invasion had brought.

The Muslims were caught unaware of the dangers of such culture, they began resisting and fighting the physical occupation of their lands whilst embracing the Western culture, which was the real reason behind the occupation taking root in their lands. The sad irony is that Muslims, while allegedly turning their backs on the foreigner and fighting the occupation, welcomed the West with open arms and drank from its poison until they collapsed, weary and lifeless; one would think them casualties of war, alas they were in fact victims of ignorance and misguidance.

What do they actually seek? A state based on other than Islam? Or several states on Muslim land? The West, since becoming the effective ruler, has already given them several states; completing therefore its scheme of keeping Islam out of government, dividing the Muslim land and giving the Muslims a trivial and facade rule. From time to time, the West creates for Muslims a new state, and it is more than willing to give them even more as long as they hold on to Western principles and concepts.

The point at issue is not establishing several states, but one single state over the whole of the Muslim world. And not establishing any state, nor a state that calls itself Islamic but rules by other than what Allah (swt) has decreed; nor a state calling itself Islamic and implementing Islamic Laws without carrying Islam as an intellectual leadership. The crucial point at issue is not the establishment of such pseudo-Islamic states, but of a single state which would resume the Islamic way of life based upon the Islamic 'aqeedah, implement Islam within society after

this was deeply rooted in the peoples' hearts and minds, and would carry the Message of Islam to the whole world.

The Islamic State is not a dream, nor is it a figment of the imagination, for it had dominated and influenced history for more than thirteen hundred years. So, it is a reality, it has always been and always will be. The vital elements of its existence are far greater than can be ignored or fought against by anything or anyone; the enlightened people have adopted it and it is the wish of the Ummah which is eager for the glory of Islam. The Islamic State is not a desire that one aims to satisfy, but an obligation that Allah (swt) has decreed on Muslims and commanded them to execute. He (swt) warned of the punishment awaiting those who neglect this duty.

How are they to please their Lord if the 'izzah in their countries is not for Allah (swt), nor for His Messenger (saw), nor for the believers? How are they to be safe from His punishment if they do not establish a state that would prepare the army for battle, defend the territory, implement Allah's penal code and rule by what Allah (swt) has revealed? Therefore, Muslims must establish the Islamic State, for Islam would not have an influential existence without it, and their land would not become Dar al-Islam unless it is ruled by that which Allah (swt) has revealed.

The Islamic State is by no means an easy acquisition, nor a question of simply becoming ministers (this applies to both parties and individuals) and becoming part of the present ruling system. The road is embedded with thorns, full of perils, obstacles and hardships, not to mention the non-Islamic culture, shallow thinking and pro-Western regimes which form a formidable obstacle. Those who tread the path of the Islamic call to restore the Islamic State, would in fact be aiming at seizing power in order to resume the Islamic way of life in the Muslim lands, and to convey the Message of Islam to the whole world. That is why they would categorically reject sharing power with anyone, no matter how great the temptation. They would also reject absolute rule unless they were capable of implementing Islam comprehensively, radically and instantaneously.

Finally, this book about the Islamic State is not meant to narrate its history but to explain how the Messenger of Allah (saw) established the Islamic State, and to show how the colonial disbelievers destroyed it. It demonstrates how Muslims should re-establish their State so that the light that guided the world in the darkest of ages returns to enlighten humanity once again.

## 2. The Starting Point

When the Messenger of Allah (saw) was sent to mankind with the Message of Islam, he first invited his wife Khadijah and she believed in him. Then he (saw) invited his cousin 'Ali and he believed in him. He then invited his servant Zayd, and he believed in him. And then he invited his friend Abu Bakr, who also believed in him. He then began inviting people to Islam, some believed and some rejected.

When Abu Bakr embraced Islam, he in turn revealed his belief to the people he trusted and called towards Allah (swt) and His Messenger (saw). Abu Bakr was held in high esteem among his people, they enjoyed his company and always consulted him in many issues. He used his influence to persuade 'Uthman ibn 'Affan, together with Zubayr ibn al-'Awwam, 'Abd al-Rahman ibn 'Auf, Sa'd ibn Abi Waqqas and Talhah ibn 'Ubaydullah to embrace Islam. He brought them to the Messenger of Allah (saw) where they all confirmed their belief and offered prayer.

Then, 'Amir ibn al-Jarrah (known as Abu Ubaydah) embraced Islam, and so did 'Abdullah ibn 'Abd al-Asad (known as Abu Salamah) as well as al-Arqam ibn Abi al-Arqam, 'Uthman ibn Maz'un and others. Scores of people then embraced Islam, until it became the talking point among the people of Quraysh.

The Messenger of Allah (saw) at the start of his call would visit people in their homes, telling them that they had been commanded by Allah (swt) to worship Him and to associate none with Him. He (saw) openly invited people to Islam in Makkah, thus abiding by Allah's command,

"O you wrapped up (in a mantle) arise and deliver the warning." [TMQ 74:1]

After this, the Messenger of Allah (saw) would contact people secretly to teach them Islam and gather them on the basis of the deen.

The Sahabah (companions) used to offer prayers in the hills on the outskirts of Makkah away from Quraysh. Every time someone embraced Islam, Allah's Messenger (saw) would send him or her someone from those who had embraced Islam earlier to teach them the Qur'an. He (saw) sent Khabbab ibn al-Arrat to teach the Qur'an to Fatima bint al-Khattab and her husband Sa'id. 'Umar ibn al-Khattab once surprised them whilst they held their circle, and he embraced Islam there and then. The Messenger of Allah (saw) realised that this was not enough though, so he set up the house of al-Arqam ibn Abi al-Arqam as the centre of his call, a place from which he taught Muslims the Qur'an and perfected their knowledge of Islam, encouraging them to recite the Qur'an and understand it. Every time someone embraced Islam, Allah's Messenger (saw) would join him in the house of al-Arqam. He (saw) pursued this task for three years, teaching this group of Muslims, leading them in prayers, and performing tahajjud at night, motivating their souls, strengthening therefore their belief through prayer and recitation, helping them to improve their way of thinking and to reflect on the verses of the Qur'an and the creation of Allah (swt). He (saw) taught them how to endure all hardships by submitting to Allah (swt).

The Messenger of Allah (saw) remained together with his party of Muslims in the house of al-Arqam until Allah (swt) revealed his saying,

"Therefore, expound openly what you are commanded and turn away from those who join false gods with Allah." [TMQ 15: 94]

### 3. The Structuring Of The Sahabah

At the beginning of his call, the Messenger of Allah (saw) invited to Islam people whom he felt had the readiness to accept it, regardless of their age, position, race, or origin. He (saw) never selected people, he invited people indiscriminately and then sensed their readiness to accept Islam. Scores of people believed and embraced Islam. He (saw) was anxious to educate all those who embraced Islam and perfect their knowledge of the deen, as well as teach them the Qur'an. These companions formed a group and they carried the message themselves. Their number grew to over forty men and women, they came from all walks of life, though they were mostly young men. There were among them the poor and the rich, the weak and the strong. This group of Muslims who believed in Allah's Messenger (saw) and pursued the da'wah were:

1. 'Ali ibn Abi Talib (8 years old)
2. Zubayr ibn al-'Awwam (8 years old)
3. Talhah ibn 'Ubaydullah (11 years old)
4. Al-Arqam ibn Abi al-Arqam (12 years old)
5. 'Abdullah ibn Mas'ud (14 years old)
6. Sa'id ibn Zayd (under twenty)
7. Sa'd ibn Abi Waqqas (17 years old)
8. Sa'ud ibn Rabi'ah (17 years old)
9. Ja'far ibn Abi Talib (18 years old)
10. Suhayb al-Rumi (under twenty)
11. Zayd ibn Harithah (about twenty)
12. 'Uthman ibn 'Affan (about twenty)
13. Tulayb ibn 'Umayr (about twenty)
14. Khabbab ibn al-Arrat (about twenty)
15. 'Amir ibn Fuhayrah (23 years old)
16. Mus'ab ibn 'Umayr (24 years old)
17. Al-Miqdad ibn al-Aswad (24 years old)
18. 'Abdullah ibn Jahsh (25 years old)
19. 'Umar ibn al-Khattab (26 years old)
20. Abu Ubaydah ibn al-Jarrah (27 years old)
21. 'Utbah ibn Ghazwan (27 years old)
22. Abu Hudhayfah ibn 'Utbah (30 years old)
23. Bilal ibn Rabah (about 30 years old)
24. 'Ayyash ibn Rabi'ah (about 30 years old)
25. 'Amir ibn Rabi'ah (about 30)
26. Na'im ibn 'Abdullah (about 30)
27. 'Uthman (30 years old), and
28. 'Abdullah (17 years old), and
29. Qudamah (19 years old), and
30. Al-Saib (about 20, all four being sons of Maz'un ibn Habib)
31. Abu Salamah 'Abdullah ibn 'Abd al-Asad al-Makhzumi (about 30)
32. 'Abd al-Rahman ibn 'Auf (about 30)
33. 'Ammar ibn Yasir (between 30 and 40)
34. Abu Bakr al-Siddiq (37 years old)
35. Hamzah ibn 'Abd al-Muttalib (42 years old)
36. 'Ubaydah ibn al-Harith (50 years old)

A number of women also embraced Islam.

After three years, the Messenger of Allah (saw) was relieved and reassured when these Sahabah matured and developed an Islamic culture and when their hearts and minds became filled with nothing but Islamic concepts. He (saw) then became certain that they had acquired a deep understanding of Islam and that their personalities had reached great heights in terms of belief in Allah (swt); only then did his worries ease, for this group of Muslims became strong and capable enough to face society, so he (saw) came out leading his group to confront Quraysh when Allah (swt) ordered him to do so.

#### **4. The Launching Of The Call**

The fact of the Islamic call was known from the first day the Messenger of Allah (saw) was sent. People in Makkah had known all along that Muhammad (saw) was calling for a new deen, and that scores of people had embraced Islam. They also knew that Muhammad (saw) was gathering his companions and looking after them, and that the Muslims concealed themselves from the rest of Quraysh while they grouped together and learned about their new deen.

People in Makkah were aware of this new call and of those who believed in it, but they never knew where they met nor who they were. That is why when the Messenger of Allah (saw) proclaimed his new belief, it did not come as a surprise. What surprised Makkah was the emergence of the new group of Muslims. The Muslims had gained a great deal of strength when Hamzah ibn ‘Abd al-Muttalib embraced Islam, followed by ‘Umar ibn al-Khattab three days later. Then came the revelation of Allah (swt),

"Therefore expound openly what you are commanded and turn away from those who join false gods with Allah. For sufficient are We unto you against those who scoff. Those who adopt, with Allah another god: but soon will they come to know." [TMQ 15:94-96]

Allah’s Messenger (saw) duly obeyed Allah’s command and revealed his group to the whole of Makkah; he went out with his Companions in two lines, one led by ‘Umar the other and Hamzah. The Sahabah walked in an order that Quraysh had never witnessed before. He (saw) then circumambulated the Ka’bah with them.

This is the stage when Allah’s Messenger (saw) moved with his companions from the secret phase to the open one, from calling and addressing and inviting those whom he felt were ready to answer his call, to addressing all people. The da‘wah then took a new turn, the clash between Iman and Kufr in society began, the interaction between the right concepts and the rotten ones began, setting off therefore the second phase of the da‘wah, i.e. the phase of interaction and struggle.

The disbelievers began resisting and fighting the da‘wah, inflicting in the process all kinds of harm and injury on the Messenger of Allah (saw) and his companions. This phase was one of the most severe of all; the house of Allah’s Messenger (saw) was stoned and Umm Jamil, wife of Abu Lahab, used to throw impurities outside his home. He (saw) just ignored or removed them in turn. Abu Jahl once threw a ewe’s uterus, slaughtered as a sacrifice to the idols, at Allah’s Messenger (saw). He (saw) bore it all, he would go to his daughter Fatima to clean him and to restore his purity. This only strengthened Allah’s Messenger’s (saw) resolve and made him invite to Islam even harder. Muslims were threatened and hurt, every tribe took it upon itself to torture and persecute its Muslim tribesmen. One of those tribes left their slave Bilal to die on the burning sand with a heavy rock upon his chest simply because he insisted on Islam. Bilal defiantly uttered the words ‘Ahad! Ahad!’ (the One the One) and endured all the suffering for the sake of his Lord. One woman died after being subjected to torture, simply because she would not renounce her new belief and return to the faith of her forefathers.

The Muslims endured the suffering, the torture, the humiliation and deprivation with only one aim in mind, seeking to please Allah (swt).

## 5. Hostility Against The Call

When Allah's Messenger (saw) was sent with Islam, people talked about him and his Message. Quraysh, however, talked the least, because they ignored him at first thinking that his call would be no more than the talk of priests and wise men and that people would eventually return to the faith of their fathers and ancestors.

This is why they did not bother nor interfere with him. Whenever he passed by them they would say, "Here is the son of 'Abd al-Muttalib who is spoken to from the heavens." After a short spell however, they realised the threat of his campaign and decided to fight him. At first they simply resorted to degrading and ridiculing his claims to prophecy. Then they began to challenge him by asking him to perform miracles to prove his Message. They would say: Why does Muhammad not transform al-Safa and al-Marwa into gold? Why does the book revealed to him not descend from the sky written? Why does Jibreel, whom Muhammad keeps talking about, not appear to them? Why does he not bring life to the dead? Why does he not remove the mountains which surround Makkah? Why does he not dig a source of fresh water from Zamzam, knowing that his people badly need water? Why does his Allah not forecast the future prices of goods so that they can bid for them?

The smear campaign against Allah's Messenger (saw) went on for some time. Quraysh lashed out insults, abuse and sarcasm, but he (saw) never waned nor deviated from his path and went on inviting people to Islam, ridiculing their idols and demonstrating the idiocy and shallow mindedness of people who worshipped them and built their hopes on them.

This became far too much for Quraysh to bear, thus they resorted to any means necessary to induce him (saw) to renounce his Message, all this was to no avail. Three of the major methods which Quraysh used to fight the da'wah were: 1. Torture 2. Internal and external propaganda 3. Boycott.

Torture befell the Messenger of Allah (saw), despite his family's protection, and his followers. Quraysh resorted to all types of torture and they became experts at it. The family of Aal-Yasir were all subjected to horrific torture in order to make them abandon their deen, but this only made them more determined and steadfast. Allah's Messenger (saw) passed by them while they were being tortured and said to them, "Hold on Aal-Yasir! Your reward is jannah. Your destiny is with Allah." Upon this Sumayyah, wife of Yasir said, "I can see it, O Messenger of Allah."

The torture of Allah's Messenger (saw) and his companions went on unabated for a spell until Quraysh realised that it was all in vain, so they resorted to another method in order to fight the da'wah, which consisted of libel and propaganda against Islam and the Muslims in Makkah as well as outside in Abyssinia. This method was used in all its types and forms, ranging from arguments, debates, mockery and a smear campaign. Libel was used against the Islamic 'aqeedah itself, and directly against the Messenger of Allah (saw). Quraysh lied about him and accused him falsely. They planned and schemed many ways to discredit him. Quraysh carefully prepared how best they could discredit Islam especially in the hajj season; going so far as to liaise with al-Walid ibn al-Mughirah in order to discuss with him ways to libel the Messenger of Allah (saw). They were concerned about what they should tell the Arabs coming to Makkah for hajj. Some suggested that they should announce that he was a kahin (soothsayer). Al-Walid rejected this by pointing out that Muhammad (saw) was devoid of the unintelligent murmuring and rhymed speech of the kahin. Some claimed that he was a poet, yet they knew poetry in all its forms and metres and so rejected this claim too. Others suggested that he was possessed. Al-Walid also rejected this for Muhammad's behavior was

not that of a possessed man. Still others started accusing him of sorcery, al-Walid rejected this idea saying that Muhammad (saw) did not practice the secret arts performed by sorcerers, such as the well known ritual of blowing on knots.

After lengthy debate, Quraysh agreed to accuse him of being a sorcerer possessing the sihr al-bayan (magic of words). Afterwards, they dispersed among the congregations of pilgrims warning the Arabs against listening to Muhammad (saw) and depicting him to be a magician of speech. They said that his message separated a man from his brother, or from his father, or from his wife, or from his family. However, this propaganda did not work, and the Message of Islam continued to reach people. Quraysh then approached al-Nadr ibn al-Harith and assigned to him the task of campaigning against the Messenger of Allah (saw). Whenever he (saw) held a meeting to which people were invited, reminding them of Allah and His admonishment of bygone generations, al-Nadr ibn al-Harith arose and narrated stories about the kings of Persia and their religion. He proclaimed, "In what respect is Muhammad a better story-teller than I? Does he not expound tales of the past the same as I do?" Quraysh spread such stories and gossip widely. They told people that what Muhammad (saw) was saying was not from Allah but was instead taught to him by a Christian youth called Jabr. This rumour took deep root among the people until Allah (swt) replied by revealing the following verse,

"We know indeed that they say: It is a man that teaches him. The tongue of him they wickedly point to is notably foreign, while this is Arabic, pure and clear." [TMQ 16:103]

The libel against Islam and the persecution of the Muslims continued in the Arabian Peninsula. When Quraysh heard that some Muslims, being afraid of forced apostasy, had emigrated to Abyssinia they sent two determined envoys after them to discredit the Muslims in the hope that the Negus would expel them from his kingdom and have them sent back. The two envoys were 'Amr ibn al-'As ibn Wa'il and 'Abdullah ibn Rabi'ah. They reached Abyssinia and offered presents to the generals of the Negus to help them convince the Negus to extradite the Muslim refugees. They said to them, "Some foolish fellows from our people have taken refuge in the King's country, they have forsaken our deen and not accepted yours, but have brought into being an invented deen which neither we nor you know anything about. Our nobles have sent us to you to return them. So surrender them to us, for their own people have the keenest insight and know most about their faults." They also stipulated that the King should not speak to the Muslims, fearing what they might say to him. The generals met with the Negus and recommended that he surrender the Muslims to their own people. The Negus summoned the Muslims and demanded to hear what they had to say for themselves. When they came he asked them, "What is this deen for which you have forsaken your people without entering into my deen or any other?" Ja'far ibn Abi Talib answered him by explaining their ignorance before Islam and comparing it to their new position under its guidance. He said, "Thereupon our people attacked us. So when they got the better of us, they treated us unjustly and came between us and our deen, we came to your country, having chosen you above all others, but we hope that we shall not be treated unjustly while we are with you." The Negus said to Ja'far, "Do you have with you anything from what your Messenger brought from Allah to read to me?" Ja'far said, "Yes," and recited surah Maryam from the beginning until where Allah (swt) says,

"But she pointed to the baby. They said, How can we talk to one who is a child in the cradle? He said, I am indeed a servant of Allah, He has given me revelation and made me a Prophet. And He has made me blessed where ever I be, and has commanded on me prayer and almsgiving as long as I live. (He) has made me kind to my mother and not overbearing or miserable. Peace on me on the day I was born, and the day I die, and the day I shall be raised alive." [TMQ 19:29-33]

When the patriarchs heard this they said, "This and what our Lord 'Isa (Jesus) the Messiah brought are from the same source." The Negus said, "Of a truth, this and what Musa brought have come from the same niche. You two may go, for by Allah, I will never give them up and they shall not be betrayed." The two envoys left the royal Palace and began to think of another way to fulfill their task. The next day 'Amr ibn al-'As went back to the Negus and said to him, "The Muslims say dreadful things about 'Isa, son of Maryam, send for them and ask them about it." He did so and Ja'far replied, "We say about him that which our Prophet brought, saying, he is the slave of Allah and His Messenger, and His spirit, and His word, which He cast into Maryam the blessed virgin." The Negus took a stick from the ground, drew a line in the soil with it and said to Ja'far, "There is nothing more than this line between your deen and ours", and he discharged the two envoys empty-handed.

Ultimately, all the ways and means of propaganda pronounced against the Islamic da'wah failed. The sheer force of truth reflected in what the Messenger of Allah (saw) was calling for, defeated all rumours, lies and propaganda, and the light of Islam dissipated all attempts at discrediting it. Therefore, Quraysh resorted to a third method, which was the boycott. They agreed to completely isolate the Messenger of Allah (saw) and his family and they drew up a document in which they decided not to deal with Banu Hashim and Banu 'Abd al-Muttalib, neither to marry their women nor give their own women to them in marriage, neither buy anything from them nor sell anything to them. When they had agreed on these conditions they wrote them in a deed and hung it inside the Ka'bah to remind them of their obligations. They anticipated that this policy of sanctions would bring the desired effect and that it would be more efficient than either propaganda or torture.

The boycott continued for two to three years, all the while Quraysh were hoping that Banu Hashim and Banu 'Abd al-Muttalib would abandon Muhammad (saw), that the Muslims would renounce their faith, and that eventually Muhammad (saw) would be left all alone at their mercy. They hoped the sanctions would either lead to Muhammad (saw) abandoning his call for Islam, or to the threat that his call posed to Quraysh and their deen disappearing. However, this technique only strengthened the Messenger of Allah's resolve and made his companions more determined and steadfast in pursuing the da'wah. The boycott failed to put a halt to the spread of the Message of Islam within Makkah and outside. News of the boycott reached the Arabs outside Makkah and the fame of the call spread among the tribes; Islam was a subject of discussion all over the Arabian Peninsula. However, the boycott and starvation went on relentlessly and the document which Quraysh drew up remained enforced. The Messenger's family and companions suffered hunger and deprivation and subsisted on meagre provisions which they obtained from sympathisers. Their only respite was during the sacred months, when the Messenger of Allah (saw) used to go to the Ka'bah and invite people to the deen of Allah, telling them of His rewards and warning them about His punishment, then afterwards he had to return to the mountain valley. This earned Allah's Messenger (saw), his family and his companions the sympathy of the Arabs, some of whom responded to the call and embraced Islam, while others sent food and drink to them secretly. Hisham ibn 'Amr was known to have brought camels laden with food at night and on reaching the mouth of the valley he would release the animal, give it a slap on its side, and send it into the valley to where the Muslims were. They would take the food, slaughter the camel and eat it.

The Muslims were to endure the boycott for about three years, during which time life became extremely harsh, until Allah (swt) sent His relief and finally broke the siege. Five young men from Quraysh, Zuhayr ibn Abi Umayyah, Hisham ibn 'Amr, al-Mut'im ibn 'Adi, Abu al-Bakhtari ibn Hisham and Zama'ah ibn al-Aswad gathered together. They talked about the document and its sanctions and they, like many of the Quraysh at that time, expressed their

resentment of it. At length they agreed to resolve the whole issue of the unjust boycott by securing its annulment. The next day, they went to the Ka'bah and Zuhayr went around it seven times. Addressing the crowd who were present, he said, "O people of Makkah, are we to eat and clothe ourselves whilst Banu Hashim perish, unable to buy or sell? By Allah I will not rest until this evil boycotting document is torn up." Abu Jahl, who was nearby, exclaimed, "You lie, by Allah it shall not be torn up." At this point the other four Zama'ah, Abu al-Bakhtari, al-Mut'im and Hisham, who had dispersed among the crowd, shouted back in support of Zuhayr. Abu Jahl realised that it was a matter which had been decided beforehand, so he feared the worst and backed off. When al-Mut'im went to tear up the document he discovered that white ants had already eaten it except for the words 'In your name, O Allah'.

The Messenger of Allah (saw) and his companions then proceeded to return to Makkah and the embargo was finally lifted. Thereafter, Allah's Messenger (saw) continued to pursue his call and the number of Muslims continued to grow steadily, marking therefore the failure of all the methods Quraysh employed in their attempt to oppress the message of Islam, to come between the Muslims and their deen and to make Allah's Messenger (saw) renounce his da'wah which, with Allah's help, became widespread despite all the obstacles and hardships.

## 6. The Interaction Of The Call

The impact that the Islamic call had on Quraysh was only natural, for the Messenger of Allah (saw) took up the struggle and revealed his group to Quraysh in a conspicuous and challenging manner. It left them with no room to doubt its implications for them. In addition, the call itself included the struggle against Quraysh and the Makkan society; for it was calling to the Oneness of Allah, to worship Him alone, to abandon the worship of idols and to renounce the rotten system they were living by. Therefore the call collided head on with Quraysh, and this was inevitable since the Messenger of Allah (saw) was ridiculing their aspirations, cursing their gods, mocking their way of life and deploring their tyrannical practices.

Whenever a verse was revealed to him (saw), he would attack Quraysh with it openly. He would recite Allah's words, "Verily you (disbelievers) and the (false) gods that you worship besides Allah, are (but) fuel for Hell!" [TMQ 21:98]

He (saw) strongly attacked riba when Allah (swt) revealed the following,

"That which you lay out for increase through the property of (other) people, will have no increase with Allah." [TMQ 30:39]

Allah's Messenger threatened and warned all by consistently reciting Allah's verses,

"Woe to those that deal in fraud. Those who, when they have to receive by measure, from men, exact full measure. But when they have to measure or weigh to men, give less than due." [TMQ 83:1-3]

Quraysh, therefore, confronted him and began fighting him and his companions. This they endeavoured to do by means of torture, sanctions and propaganda against him personally and against his deen. In return he (saw) carried the offensive to them, pursuing his struggle against their erroneous notions and demolishing their corrupt beliefs in order to spread the Message of Islam according to the way decreed by Allah (swt). He (saw) invited people to Islam openly, without any secrecy, prevaricating, pliancy, abating or adulation, despite all the various types of grievances that Quraysh inflicted upon him, and despite being a defenceless figure with no real help, no ally, no material means and no weapons. He (saw) came conspicuously and challengingly, inviting to the deen of Allah with great resolve and faith, ignoring all the hardships, not allowing weakness to get the better of him, ready to endure the colossal burdens for the sake of the Message. This enabled him to surmount all the obstacles that Quraysh put in his way, which were designed to come between him and the people. The Messenger of Allah (saw) succeeded in reaching the people and in conveying the Message to them; in turn they embraced Islam because the truth and the force of reason defeated the falsehood. The light of Islam began shining between the Arabs, many idol-worshippers embraced Islam, so did many Christians, even the leaders of Quraysh began listening to the Qur'an with yearning hearts.

Al-Tufayl ibn 'Amr al-Dausi came to Makkah when Allah's Messenger (saw) was there. He was an important nobleman, very intelligent and a poet of some understanding. Quraysh approached him immediately and warned him that this fellow Muhammad (saw) had done them much harm, that he was a sorcerer and that his talk separated men from their families. They exclaimed that they feared he might have the same effect on him and advised him not to speak to Muhammad (saw) or listen to a word he said. Al-Tufayl went one day to the Ka'bah and it happened that Allah's Messenger (saw) was there, he listened to some of his speech and found it beautiful, so he said to himself, "By Allah! Here am I, an intelligent man, a poet,

knowing perfectly well the difference between good and evil, so what is to prevent me from listening to what this man is saying? If it is good I shall accept it and if it is bad I shall reject it." He followed the Messenger of Allah (saw) to his house and told him about himself and what was on his mind. So Allah's Messenger (saw) invited him to Islam and recited to him the Qur'an, in reply he became a Muslim and declared it was the truth. Then he went back to his people and proceeded to call them to Islam.

While the Messenger of Allah (saw) was in Makkah, some twenty Christians journeyed to meet him after receiving news about him from afar. They sat and listened to him and accepted and believed in him and declared his truth. This enraged Quraysh and they later intercepted them as they were leaving Makkah and hurled insults at them saying, "May Allah fail you! What a wretched band you are. Your people at home sent you to bring them information about this man, and as soon as you sat with him, you renounced your religion and believed in what he said." This, however, did not affect them, nor did it affect their belief in Islam, rather it strengthened all the more their belief in Allah (swt). The fame of the Messenger of Allah (saw) increased, as did people's yearning to listen to the Qur'an. It reached a point whereby his harshest opponents from Quraysh began wondering whether what he (saw) was calling for was really true. This led them to listen to the Qur'an in secret.

Abu Sufyan ibn Harb, Abu Jahl 'Amr ibn Hisham and al-Akhnas ibn Shurayq, unknown to one another, went out one night to listen to the Messenger of Allah (saw) as he was praying in his house. Each of them were disguised and each chose a place to sit where he could listen; none knew where the other was. Allah's Messenger (saw) regularly stayed up most of the night reciting the Qur'an. They passed this particular night listening attentively to him, their imagination was captured and their hearts affected, until dawn arose when they all quickly dispersed. On the way home they met accidentally, reproaching one another, each one said to the other, "Don't do it again, for if one of the light-minded fools sees you, it would compromise and weaken your standing, and it would tip the scales in Muhammad's favour." On the second night, each of them felt his legs taking him to the same spot where he had spent the previous night. The three listened once again to Allah's Messenger (saw) reciting the Book of Allah and, as before, they met at dawn and reproached each other, yet this did not prevent them from attending for a third night. When they realised their weakness towards Muhammad's Message, they took a solemn oath never to return. Nevertheless this incident resulted in an exchange of views concerning what they had heard over the three nights; they were agitated because their actions manifested signs of weakness which none of them, as leader of his tribe, could afford. This, they acknowledged, could be construed as playing into the hands of Muhammad (saw) and it might encourage the people to accept his Message.

Despite all the obstacles that Quraysh laid down, the call succeeded in reaching the whole of Makkah, and Quraysh became panic stricken fearing the worst, i.e. the spreading of Islam among the Arab tribes. Quraysh therefore intensified the hostilities against Allah's Messenger (saw) and his companions. The situation eventually became almost unbearable and Allah's Messenger (saw) went to the city of Ta'if seeking the nussrah (support) and protection of Tha'if in the hope that they might embrace Islam. He approached them on his own, but they spoke to him harshly and treated him very badly. They stirred up their louts and slaves who hurled insults and stones at him until the whole of his body including his feet bled. He (saw) managed to take refuge in an orchard belonging to Shabeeb and Shayba, sons of Rabi'ah. There he sat thinking about his situation and about the call. He knew that he could not enter Makkah without one of the leaders' protection, neither could he go back to Ta'if after the way he had been treated there, and he could not stay in the orchard for it belonged to two disbelievers. He (saw) felt very distressed and lifted his arms to the sky lamenting to Allah.

Painfully and with immense confidence in Allah (swt), he said, "O Allah! To You I complain of my weakness, little resource, and lowliness before man. O Most Merciful! You are the Lord of the weak, and You are my Lord. To whom would You confide me? To one afar who will misuse me or to an enemy to whom You have given dominance over me? If You are not angry with me I do not care. Your favour of well-being on me is sufficient for me. I take refuge in the light of Your countenance by which the darkness is illuminated, and the things of this world and the next are rightly ordered, lest Your anger descend upon me or Your wrath not light upon me but come down on me. It is for You to be satisfied until You are well pleased. There is no power and no might except in You." Whereupon he returned to Makkah under the protection of al-Mut'im ibn 'Adiy. Quraysh soon learnt what had happened to the Messenger of Allah (saw) in Ta'if, and this only made them intensify their hostilities and ill treatment of the Messenger (saw) and they prohibited people from listening to him. The Makkans deserted him and refrained from listening to his preaching. However, he (saw) was never disheartened, he went on calling to the deen of Allah by offering himself to the tribes during the festive seasons, inviting them to Islam, telling them that he was a Prophet sent by Allah and asking them to believe in him. But Abu Lahab, his hateful uncle, never left his sight. He followed him everywhere telling people not to listen to him, so the people ignored him and paid him no attention.

The Messenger of Allah (saw) then resorted to visiting the tribes in their encampments, offering himself to them. He visited the tribes of Kinda, Kalb, Banu Hanifah and Banu 'Aamir ibn Sa'sa'ah. None of them actually responded to his call and they all bitterly opposed him, especially Banu Hanifah. As for Banu 'Aamir, they wanted authority after him in return for giving him allegiance. He (saw) replied, "Authority is a matter which Allah places where He pleases." Upon hearing this Banu 'Aamir also declined to help.

Therefore Makkah rejected Islam, as did the people of Ta'if, and the tribes too rejected the Messenger of Allah's call. Those tribes who came to Makkah to conduct business learnt of the situation of the Messenger of Allah (saw) and his isolation, and this only drove them further away from him, thus worsening his isolation. The call for Islam became much more difficult whilst the Makkan society showed signs of total rejection, disbelief and stubbornness. Expectations for the da'wah in Makkah became very low.

## 7. The Two Stages Of The Call

The call of the Messenger of Allah (saw) in Makkah was divided into two stages. The first stage was the stage of teaching, culturing and intellectual and spiritual building. The second stage was the spreading of the Message and the struggle. So the first stage was to ensure the correct understanding of the new concepts and to incorporate them into personalities and to structure them around these concepts. While the second stage was to transfer these concepts into a mobilising force in the society that drives it to implement them in the different walks of life; for concepts remain only as information unless they are implemented in society. In order for these concepts to be implemented, they first have to go through the process of being transformed from mere thoughts to becoming a driving force within society, then people would adopt them, realise them, carry them and struggle to see them implemented. From there onwards their implementation would become a certainty and merely the natural outcome of events. This is how the Messenger of Allah (saw) went about his call in Makkah. In the first stage, he called people to Islam, cultured them with its concepts and taught them its rules. He gathered whoever he could on the basis of the Islamic belief; this was the stage of the secret grouping in the da'wah. Allah's Messenger (saw) pursued the call unabated, eager to culture all those who embraced Islam. He gathered them in the house of al-Arqam, or sent someone to culture them in circles in their own homes or in the mountain valleys. They did so in secret and gathered in a group. Their belief became stronger, and relations between them closer, and their awareness of the task that they faced increased by the day until they were ready to sacrifice anything in the way of the da'wah. The Message took deep root in their hearts and in their minds, Islam became like the blood in their veins - they became walking examples of Islam. Therefore, the Message could never remain a prisoner within their minds, despite the secrecy of their grouping and the care they took to keep their party a guarded secret.

They began talking to people they trusted, and to those in whom they felt a readiness to accept Islam. People, therefore, found out about their Message and felt their presence. At this stage, it became impossible for the Islamic call to be held back, so it had to be launched by calling all the people to Islam. That marked the end of the first stage, i.e. the culturing and grouping together in secret, and the call inevitably moved into the second stage, the stage of interaction and struggle caused by expounding Islam and its concepts to the people. Some people responded and accepted, and others rejected it, fought it and collided with its concepts. However, before disbelief and falsehood could be defeated and before Iman and righteousness could gain the upper hand, such a clash was inevitable. Yet, no matter how stubborn peoples' minds are, they can never permanently block the path of the right concept and reject it, although they try to avoid it in case it affects them.

Therefore the stage of interaction started, incorporating as it did the struggle between the two thoughts, between the Muslims and the disbelievers. It proceeded from the time that the Messenger of Allah (saw) emerged with his group of companions, in a manner never before witnessed by the Arabs, and together they circumambulated the Ka'bah declaring the Message. From that time on, the Messenger of Allah (saw) invited for Islam in Makkah publicly, conspicuously and challengingly.

Qur'anic verses, calling to the Oneness of Allah (swt), were revealed to the Messenger of Allah (saw), as were the verses deploring disbelief and idol-worship, and the verses attacking the way people blindly followed their forefathers. These verses were revealed to abhor the corrupt dealings within society, they attacked riba, corruption and cheating in measuring and weighing. In order to address the people, the Messenger of Allah (saw) talked to them about

Islam in groups. He started by gathering together his family and nearest relations, inviting them for meals. Then he invited them to Islam and asked them to support him, but they rejected him. He gathered the Makkans at al-Safa and talked to them, but this enraged the leaders of Quraysh, especially Abu Lahab, thus the rift deepened between Allah's Messenger (saw) and Quraysh and between him and the other Arabs. Thus, the call added public culturing to the concentrated culturing in circles held in the houses, in the valleys and in the house of al-Arqam.

The call moved from the covert stage of inviting to Islam only those who had the willingness to accept it, to inviting all people. The collective call and culturing had a notable effect on Quraysh, for it unleashed from their quarters a great deal of hatred which mounted, as the threat of the call grew steadily. Quraysh began taking serious measures to counter and resist the da'wah after realising that it could no longer ignore Muhammad (saw) and his Message. Thus the hostilities intensified against Allah's Messenger (saw) and his companions.

The collective efforts of the group, however, had a massive effect. It created public opinion for the da'wah and this helped it to spread rapidly through the whole of Makkah. Everyday that passed saw a growth in the number of Muslims, the poor, the deprived and the oppressed embraced Islam so did the nobles and leaders, and the rich traders whose trading did not distract them from reflecting on what the Messenger of Allah (saw) was calling for. Those who embraced Islam were the ones whose minds and hearts understood purity, wisdom and truth, and those who raised themselves above stubbornness and the unyielding nature of humans, who dislike radical changes in their lives; they embraced Islam the moment they realised its righteousness and the truthfulness of the one who conveyed the Message. Islam spread in Makkah therein, and men and women embraced it. The collective da'wah played a major role in taking the Message to a wider audience despite the trials and suffering that the Muslims had to endure in the process. The success of the da'wah enraged the leaders of Quraysh still further, it was like a fire burning through their hearts. The Messenger of Allah (saw) waged an unrelenting and fierce ideological war against injustice, harshness and the slavery that dominated Makkah, and he mocked, attacked and exposed their ill-fated concepts and practices.

This marked the start of one of the severest stages, and one of the most violent phases between the Messenger of Allah (saw) and his companions on one side and the disbelievers of Quraysh on the other. Although the intermediate phase between the stage of culturing and the stage of interaction is considered to be the most delicate and sensitive, because it requires a great deal of wisdom, patience and precision, but the phase of interaction is actually the hardest because it requires frankness and defiance without giving any account to the results or the conditions. This is so because the disbelievers would be forced to come between the Muslims, their deen and their Iman, and their endurance would be severely tested.

The Messenger of Allah (saw) and his companions passed through that phase enduring the kind of oppression, torture, persecution and aggression that would weigh down the highest mountain.

Some of them emigrated to Abyssinia, some of them perished under torture and some of them survived the most atrocious types of aggression; they pursued their struggle for a long enough spell to affect the Makkan society with the light of Islam and to dissipate the darkness, under disbelief, that it had been plunged into. Despite the fact that the Messenger of Allah (saw) spent three years in the House of al-Arqam, having completed the first stage of the da'wah (that of secret gathering and culturing), he had to struggle against disbelief, even though he had clearly demonstrated his Prophethood through many miracles, for another eight years,

without Quraysh once giving any respite from torturing the Muslims, nor showing any signs of appeasing their fight against Islam. As a result of the interaction between the Muslims and Quraysh, the fame of the da‘wah spread throughout the Peninsula and became a subject on everyone’s lips; this the pilgrims did by spreading the news of the call amongst the Arab tribes. However, those Arabs remained mainly spectators and never moved one step towards Iman, their main concern was not to upset Quraysh. They avoided the Messenger of Allah (saw) in order not to clash with Quraysh. This inspired the Messenger of Allah (saw) to move on to the third phase of the da‘wah. Thus, having realised that Quraysh were as stubborn as ever and knowing that Islam had to prevail, Allah’s Messenger (saw) and his companions were no longer able to tolerate the status quo in Makkah and they moved to change the balance of power.

However, the signs in Makkah were not encouraging. Makkan society was still as hard and as rigid as ever and this ensured that the implementation of Islam there remained a remote possibility. Additionally, the increasing hostilities against the Muslims prevented them from fully devoting themselves to the call and the people’s rejection compounded the situation by rubbing salt into their wounds, only adding to their trials and tribulations.

## **8. The Expansion Of The Call**

The hostilities of Quraysh towards the Messenger of Allah (saw) and his companions reached saturation point after Thaqif of Ta'if unceremoniously chased him away, and when the tribes of Kinda, Kalb, Banu 'Aamir and Banu Hanifah rejected his call to them during the hajj season. Quraysh managed to increase his (saw) isolation further, after these set-backs, separating him and his party from any outside support. He (saw) and his companions, however, remained steadfast in their belief in Allah (swt) and never doubted His (swt) promise of victory to them and to Islam. The Messenger of Allah (saw) continued inviting people to Islam whenever possible and he approached the tribes and offered himself to them, not worrying in the slightest about the consequences. Some of the louts from Quraysh attempted to provoke him and hurt him, but he (saw) never let this affect him or his hope of a brighter future. Allah (swt) sent him with the Message of Islam and he never doubted that Allah (swt) would help and protect him and secure the deen. He (saw) waited for Allah's relief, while being very pained about the state of the da'wah. Fortunately, the Messenger of Allah (saw) did not have long to wait, for the signs of victory soon came from Yathrib (Madinah) in the shape of a group from al-Khazraj who had come to Makkah during the hajj season where the Messenger of Allah (saw) met them for the first time and invited them to Islam. They looked to each other and said, "By Allah this is the very Prophet of whom the Jews warned us. Do not let them get to him before us." Thereupon they accepted his teaching and embraced Islam. They said to him, "We have left our people (al-Aus and al-Khazraj), for no tribes are so divided by hatred and rancour as they. Perhaps Allah will unite them through you, if so, then no man will be mightier than you." When they returned to Madinah

## **9. The First Pledge Of Al-'Aqabah**

In the following year, twelve people from Madinah attended the hajj and met with the Messenger of Allah (saw) at al-'Aqabah where they gave him the first pledge of al-'Aqabah. They pledged to associate none with Allah, that they should not steal, neither commit fornication, nor kill their offspring, and that they should not slander their neighbour, nor disobey the Messenger of Allah (saw) in what was right. If they fulfilled this, jannah would be theirs, but if they committed any of those sins, it was for Allah (swt) to punish or forgive as He pleased. Once they had delivered their pledge and the hajj season was over they returned to Madinah.

## 10. The Call In Madinah

When the people of the first pledge of al-'Aqabah returned to Madinah and Islam spread to every single household among the Ansar; and they sent a man to the Messenger of Allah (saw) with a letter asking him to send them someone who would teach them the deen and the Qur'an. The Messenger of Allah (saw) never used to leave those who embraced Islam without teaching them the rules and nurturing them with the sound Islamic culture which would enable them to understand Islam and realise its essence, for the Islamic culture is vital to every Muslim, it is a means of strengthening the 'aqedah and of understanding the Message of Islam, it is also the guarantee for the consistent application of Islam. Those who embraced Islam had sensed this, therefore they asked for some one to teach them, and the Messenger of Allah (saw) sent Mus'ab ibn 'Umayr to them. On arrival, Mus'ab lodged with As'ad ibn Zurarah, he then began visiting people in their homes and camps, calling them to Islam and reciting the Qur'an and consequently a man or two would embrace Islam until Islam manifested itself and spread among every household of the Ansar, except the households of Khatmah, Wa'il and Waqif who were from (the clan of) Aus-Allah. Mus'ab ibn 'Umayr was teaching them and getting them to recite the Qur'an, and then he wrote to the Messenger of Allah (saw) asking his permission to gather them, Allah 's Messenger (saw) granted him permission and wrote back, "Wait until the Jews declare their Sabbath, and in the afternoon, approach Allah with two rak'ahs and then deliver your khutbah." Mus'ab ibn 'Umayr gathered them in the house of Sa'd ibn Khaythamah, they were twelve men and he only slaughtered for them one ewe. Mus'ab was the first in the history of Islam to hold a jum'ah prayer.

Mus'ab continued to go around Madinah calling people to Islam and teaching them the deen. One day As'ad ibn Zurarah went out with Mus'ab ibn 'Umayr to the areas of Banu al-Ashhal and of Banu Zafar (Sa'd ibn Mu'adh was incidentally As'ad ibn Zurarah's maternal cousin.) They entered one of the gardens of Banu Zafar by a well called Maraq and sat in it, where some of the men who had accepted Islam had gathered together. Sa'd ibn Mu'adh and Usayd ibn Hudayr were at the time leaders of their clan, the Banu 'Abd al-Ashhal, and both followed the polytheism of their tribe. When they had heard about him, Sa'd said to Usayd, "Go to these fellows who have entered our quarters to make fools of our comrades, drive them out and forbid them to enter our quarters. If it were not that As'ad ibn Zurarah is related to me as you know I would save you the trouble. He is my aunt's son and I can do nothing to him." So Usayd took his lance and went to them; and when As'ad saw him he said to Mus'ab, "This is the chief of his tribe who is coming to you, so be true to Allah with him." Mus'ab said, "If he will sit down, I will talk to him." He stood over them looking furious and asking what they meant by coming to deceive their weaker comrades. "Leave us if you value your lives." Mus'ab said, "Won't you sit down and listen. If you like what you hear you can accept it, and if you don't like it you can leave it alone." He agreed that was fair, stuck his lance in the ground, and sat down. He explained Islam to him and read the Qur'an. Afterwards they said, according to what has been reported by them, "By Allah, before he spoke we recognised Islam in his face by its peaceful glow." He said, "What a wonderful and beautiful discourse this is! What does one do if he wants to enter this deen?" They told him that he must wash and purify himself and his garments, then bear witness to the Truth and pray two rak'ahs. He immediately did so and said, "There is a man behind me who if he follows you every one of his people will follow suit. I will send him to you at once. It is Sa'd ibn Mu'adh."

Taking his lance he went off to Sa'd and his people sitting in a meeting place. When Sa'd saw him coming he said, "By Allah, Usayd is coming with a different expression from that which

he had when he left you." And when he came up he asked what had happened, he said, "I have spoken to the two men and I find no harm in them. I forbade them to go on and they said to me: We will do what you like; and I was told that Banu Harithah had gone out against As'ad to kill him because they knew that he was the son of your aunt so as to make you appear a treacherous protector of your guests."

Sa'd was enraged and got up at once, alarmed at what had been said about the Banu Harithah. He took the lance from his hand saying, "By Allah I see that you have been utterly ineffective." He went out to them and when he saw them sitting comfortably he knew that Usayd had intended that he should listen to them. He stood over them, looking furious. He said to As'ad, "O Abu Umamah, were it not for the relationship between us you would not have treated me thus. Would you behave in our homelands in a way we detest?" As'ad already had said to Mus'ab, "O Mus'ab, by Allah the leader who is followed by his people has come to you. If he follows you, no two of them will remain behind." So Mus'ab said to him, "Won't you sit down and listen. If you like what you hear you can accept it, and if you don't like it you can leave it alone." He agreed that was fair, stuck his lance in the ground, and sat down. He explained Islam to him and read him the Qur'an. Afterwards they said, according to what has been reported of them, "By Allah, before he spoke we recognised Islam in his face by its peaceful glow." He said, "What a wonderful and beautiful discourse this is! What does one do if he wants to enter this deen?" They told him that he must wash and purify himself and his garments, then bear witness to the truth and pray. He immediately did so. Then he took his lance and went back to his people's meeting place accompanied by Usayd ibn Hudayr. When they saw him coming they said, "We swear by Allah, Sa'd has returned with a different expression from that which he had when he left you." And when he stopped by them he said, "O Banu 'Abd al-Ashhal, how do you rate my authority amongst you?" They replied, "You are our chief, the most active in our interests, the best in judgment and the most fortunate in leadership." He said, "I will not speak to a man or woman among you until you believe in Allah and his Messenger." As a result, every man and woman among the Banu 'Abd al-Ashhal embraced Islam. Mus'ab then returned to the house of As'ad ibn Zurarah and he stayed with him as a guest, and he continued to call the people to Islam until every household of the Ansar had Muslim men and women among them. Mus'ab ibn 'Umayr remained in Madinah for one year among the Aus and the Khazraj teaching them their deen and witnessing, with great delight, the growing number of the helpers of Allah's authority and of the word of truth. He, may Allah be pleased with him, used to knock on people's doors hoping to contact them and convey the Message of Allah; he used to walk to the fields and contact the farmers to call them to Islam; he also used to confront the leaders and call them to the deen of Allah; he would also perform some deliberate tactics like the one he used with As'ad ibn Zurarah in order to gain access to people and get them to receive the voice of Truth until he managed in one single year to turn the thoughts in Madinah from corrupted idolatry and incorrect emotions to Tawheed and Iman and Islamic emotions that abhorred shirk and turned away from cheating and fraud. As a result of Mus'ab's activities and the activities of those who embraced Islam, Madinah had been transformed in one single year from a state of shirk to a state of Islam.

## 11. The Second Pledge Of Al-‘Aqabah

The first pledge of al-‘Aqabah was a good thing and a blessing. This was so because despite the small number of those who had embraced Islam, the efforts of one companion of the Messenger of Allah (saw) i.e. Mus‘ab ibn ‘Umayr were enough to lead them to change Madinah and transform the existing thoughts and emotions within its society, and despite the relatively large number of those who embraced Islam in Makkah, the people at large remained alienated from them, for the groups did not respond to Islam, and society was not affected by the Islamic thoughts and emotions; whereas by contrast, the majority of people in Madinah embraced Islam and Islam made an impact in the heart of the Madinan society, and the thoughts and emotions were affected. This clearly demonstrates that when individuals who embrace Islam remain alienated from society and the people at large, an impact within society is not generated, nor within the majority of people no matter how strong the belief of these individuals is. It also demonstrates that if the existing relationships between people were affected by thoughts and emotions they would lead to the desired transformation and change no matter how small the number of the conveyors of the message are. This also proves that when the society persists in disbelief, as was the case with the Makkan society, it becomes more difficult to transform, than the society where such erroneous notions are not dominant, as was the case with the Madinan society, even if such notions were present. Therefore, the Madinan society was affected by Islam more than the Makkan society, people in Madinah had sensed the falsehood of the thoughts they were carrying and they had been searching for other thoughts and another way of life. By contrast, the Makkan society was satisfied with its state of affairs and anxious to maintain it, especially the heads of disbelief such as Abu Lahab, Abu Jahl and Abu Sufyan. That is why it took Mus‘ab ibn ‘Umayr only a short spell to witness the response to the da‘wah, he went on calling people to Islam and culturing them with its thoughts and rules, he would feel the quick response and witness people’s willingness to accept Islam and their enthusiasm to learn and acquire the knowledge of Islam’s rules, and this would make him rejoice; he would witness the number of Muslims grow and Islam spread and this would encourage him to multiply his efforts in the da‘wah. When the season of hajj came, he returned to Makkah and reported back to the Messenger of Allah (saw), giving him an account about the Muslims in Madinah and their growing might, and about Islam and its rapid spread, describing the state of the Madinan society and how people there talked only about Allah’s Messenger (saw), and how Islam occupied centre stage. Mus‘ab informed the Messenger of Allah (saw) about the strength of the Muslims and their deterrent might, which made Islam the dominant force in Madinah, he also informed him that some Muslims, whose belief had grown stronger and whose determination to carry the Message and defend the deen of Allah had become greater than ever, would be coming to Makkah that year. The Messenger of Allah (saw) was very pleased with the news brought by Mus‘ab and began thinking long and hard in the matter and comparing the Makkan society with that of Madinah. He (saw) spent twelve consecutive years in Makkah calling for the deen of Allah, exhausting all his efforts, devoting all his time and seizing every single opportunity, enduring in the process all types of hardship, suffering and oppression, and despite all that, society in Makkah remained as stubborn as ever and the da‘wah never managed to break through, due to the remorseless hearts and the ruthless feelings of the Makkan people whose idle minds would not break away from the past. The Makkan society was harsh and its aptitude for the da‘wah was negligible due to the deeply rooted idolatrous polytheism within the hearts of its people, for Makkah was the main centre of shirk. In Madinah things were different, hardly one year had elapsed since a group of the Khazraj embraced Islam, and the first pledge of al-‘Aqabah took place, then came the efforts of Mus‘ab ibn ‘Umayr the year after, and this was

enough to generate an Islamic atmosphere in Madinah and to pave the way for people to embrace Islam at an astonishing rate. The Message of Allah in Makkah had stopped with those who had embraced Islam, with the persecution and oppression inflicted upon them by Quraysh, but in Madinah, on the other hand, had spread rapidly, with the Muslims there not having to suffer the persecution by the Jews and the disbelievers, this could only help Islam to become deeply rooted in people's hearts and to pave the way for the Muslims. Therefore, it became clear to the Messenger of Allah that Madinah had more aptitude than Makkah to become the source of the light of Islam. He (saw) therefore thought about emigrating to Madinah and to let his companions join their brothers there, to find sanctuary and safety and rid themselves from the persecution and torture which Quraysh had been inflicting upon them, this would allow them to concentrate on the da'wah and move towards its practical phase, which is the implementation of Islam and the carrying of its Message with the might and authority of an Islamic state; this was the only reason for the emigration.

It is worth mentioning that the Messenger of Allah (saw) had never thought about emigrating from Makkah simply because of the obstacles the da'wah was facing, without remaining steadfast and persevering, and without attempting to overcome those obstacles. He (saw) persevered for ten years in Makkah, always focusing his thoughts on the da'wah. He and his followers endured all types of horror and persecution in the way of the da'wah. The ill-treatment and the resistance by Quraysh never weakened his resolve and determination, on the contrary, his belief in the Message which he brought from his Lord took him to new heights, and the certainty of Allah's help made him even more steadfast and resolute. Nevertheless, he (saw) realised after those attempts how hard and stubborn the Makkan society was, how shallow minded people were and how ruthless and misguided they were. This meant that the chances of success were slim, and that pursuing the da'wah there could be a wasted effort, thus it became necessary to move away from such a society and look for another one. He therefore thought about emigrating from Makkah, and that was the only reason for thinking about moving to Madinah, not the hardship nor the persecution. Indeed the Messenger of Allah (saw) had ordered his companions to emigrate to Abyssinia to escape persecution as it is allowed for the believers to move away from places of affliction if they were persecuted because of their deen, although enduring the torture enhances Iman, and the oppression inflames faithfulness and the resistance sharpens the determination. Iman pushes believers to belittle all hardships and sacrifice wealth, honour, peace of mind and even their lives. And although belief in Allah (swt) makes the believer ready to give his life willingly in His way, unabated aggression and the continuity of sacrifice would cause the believer to become exhausted. This is so because his efforts would be diverted towards persevering against and resisting the harm inflicted upon him, rather than towards mobilising his efforts in the da'wah and broadening his horizons by being allowed to think deeply about the truthfulness of his belief. It was for this reason that the Muslims had no other alternative but to emigrate away from the places where affliction reigned. This was the case when they emigrated to Abyssinia. However, their later emigration to Madinah was prompted by different reasons. They wanted to move with their Message and bring it to life by implementing it in a society, their new society, and then spread it world-wide. It is only in this context that the Messenger of Allah (saw) contemplated ordering his companions to emigrate to Madinah. But before deciding to join them there, he had to first meet the pilgrims coming from that location and confer with the Muslims among them, in order to assess their readiness to protect the da'wah and to see how far they were prepared to sacrifice themselves in the way of Islam. He (saw) had to make sure that they were prepared to give him the pledge of war, a pledge of fighting that would form the cornerstone of the Islamic State. Thus the Messenger of Allah (saw) waited for the pilgrims; this was the twelfth year of the

Message, in 622 CE. The pilgrims were many, among whom were 75 Muslims (73 men and 2 women). One of the women was Nusaybah bint Ka'ab Umm 'Amarah from Banu Mazin ibn al-Najjar and the other was Asma' bint 'Amr ibn 'Adi from Banu Salamah, known also as Umm Mani'.

The Messenger of Allah (saw) met the Muslim pilgrims secretly and talked to them about a second pledge, which would not be concerned with simply carrying the da'wah and persevering against aggression. It would be a pledge which would go well beyond that, a pledge with far reaching consequences. It was to be a pledge that would entail forming a force capable of defending Muslims and forming the nucleus that would produce the cornerstone on which to build the foundations of a state with the power to protect it, a power that would remove all material obstacles which stood in the way of the Message and its implementation. The Messenger of Allah (saw) talked to them about the pledge and felt their readiness, and they in turn agreed to meet him at al-'Aqabah during the middle of the days of Tashriq. He (saw) said to them, "Do not wake anyone, nor wait for anyone absent." When a third of the night had passed they went stealing softly to their appointment with the Messenger of Allah (saw) at al-'Aqabah, the two women were also with them. They waited for Allah's Messenger (saw) until he came with his uncle al-'Abbas, who was at that time an disbeliever, albeit he wanted to give his nephew a firm guarantee. He was the first to speak and said, "O people of Khazraj! You know what position Muhammad holds among us. We have protected him from our own people who think as we do about him. He lives in honour and safety among his people, but he decided to turn to you and join you; so if you think you can be faithful to what you have promised him and protect him from his opponents, then assume the burden you have undertaken. But if you think that you will betray and abandon him after he has gone out with you, then leave him now." They replied, "We have heard what you say. Now you speak, O Messenger of Allah, and choose for yourself and your Lord what you wish." The Messenger of Allah (saw) spoke after reciting the Qur'an and commended Islam and said, "I invite your allegiance on the basis that you protect me as you would your women and children." Al-Bara' took his hand to give the pledge and said, "We give our allegiance O Messenger of Allah, by Allah we are men of war possessing arms which have been passed on from father to son". While al-Bara' was speaking Abu al-Haytham ibn al-Tayhan interrupted him and said, "O Messenger of Allah, we have ties with other men (meaning the Jews) and if we sever them perhaps when we have done that and Allah will have given you victory, you will return to your people and leave us." The Messenger of Allah (saw) smiled and said, "No, your blood is my blood, and what is sacred to you is sacred to me; I am of you and you are of me; I will fight against those who fight against you, and be at peace with those at peace with you." Al-'Abbas ibn 'Ubadah interrupted and said, "O people of Khazraj! Do you realise to what you are committing yourselves in pledging your support to this man? It means fighting all and sundry; if you think that if you lose your property, and your nobles are killed you will give him up, then do so now, for by Allah it would bring you shame in this world and the next if you did so later; but if you think that you will be loyal to your undertaking even if you lose your possessions and your nobles are killed, then take him, for by Allah it will profit you in this world and the Hereafter." They said that they would accept the Messenger of Allah (saw) on these conditions and then inquired, "What is in it for us, O Messenger of Allah, in return for our loyalty?" Allah's Messenger (saw) replied confidently, "Jannah." They stretched their hands forth, and he (saw) stretched his hand and they pledged their word by saying, "We pledge ourselves to fight, in complete obedience to the Messenger of Allah, in well and woe, in ease and hardship and evil circumstances; that we would not wrong anyone, that we would speak the truth at all times, and that in Allah's service we would fear the censure of none." After they gave the pledge Allah's Messenger

(saw) said, "Bring me twelve leaders who have charge of their people's affairs." They produced nine from al-Khazraj and three from al-Aus. So the Messenger of Allah (saw) said to these naqibs (leaders), "You are the guardians of your people just as the disciples of 'Isa, son of Maryam, were responsible to him while I am responsible for my people." They went back to their beds and then back to their caravan and returned to Madinah.

Afterwards, the Messenger of Allah (saw) ordered the Muslims in Makkah to emigrate to Madinah in small parties, and so they began to migrate either individually or sometimes in small groups. Quraysh by then had heard of the pledge and they attempted to prevent the Muslims from emigrating. They came between husband and wife in order to stop the migration, but the Muslims continued to leave Makkah for Madinah whilst Allah's Messenger (saw) stayed behind without indicating to anyone whether he would leave or not. There were signs, however, that he (saw) too would leave. Abu Bakr kept asking Allah's Messenger (saw) for permission to emigrate until he answered, "Don't be in a hurry, it may be that Allah will give you a companion." Abu Bakr knew then that Allah's Messenger (saw) wanted to emigrate. Quraysh were very concerned about the implications of the emigration of Allah's Messenger (saw), especially now that the Muslims in Madinah were many and enjoyed the upper hand. Evidently, their position there would be strengthened by the emigration of the Muslims from Makkah. Quraysh realised that another even more serious potential threat to them was Allah's Messenger (saw). Should he (saw) join them there, and with the power that they possessed, it could mean the end of them. They therefore thought long and hard about the issue of preventing Allah's Messenger (saw) from migrating to Madinah. Quraysh began to fear that once the Muslims had become a force to be reckoned with they would come after them and defend Allah's Messenger (saw), should he decide to stay in Makkah. With such a dilemma confronting them, they finally decided to resort to killing him (saw) so as to prevent him from joining the Muslims in Madinah and in order to avoid all future clashes with the people of Madinah, Islam and Muhammad (saw).

It has been reported in the books of seerah that in the narration of 'A'isha and Abu Umamah ibn Sahn, it was said that when the seventy-three men present at al-'Aqabah left the Messenger of Allah (saw), having given him the protection, pledging their support; the trials and tribulations of the Muslims in Makkah increased for wanting to leave, Quraysh harassed them and harmed them, they complained to Allah's Messenger (saw) so he said, "I have been shown the homeland to which you will emigrate, ready."

After a few days he (saw) emerged very pleased and said, "I have been told that you can emigrate to Yathrib, whoever wants to go there can do so." So they began their preparations to vacate the city. When these were complete they left secretly in small groups whilst the Messenger of Allah (saw) stayed on in Makkah to wait for Allah's permission to emigrate. Abu Bakr kept asking Allah's Messenger (saw) for permission to emigrate, he (saw) would say to him, "Don't be in a hurry, it may be that Allah will give you a companion." Abu Bakr hoped that his companion would be Allah's Messenger (saw) himself.

When Quraysh learnt of the companions' emigration, and since they knew that Allah's Messenger (saw) had decided to fight them, they assembled in their council chamber and after a little debate agreed to kill him. Then they dispersed. Jibreel came to the Messenger of Allah (saw) and ordered him not to sleep on the bed on which he usually slept. He (saw) did not sleep in his bed that night and it was then that Allah (swt) permitted him to emigrate.

The presence of the forces of Islam in Madinah and the readiness of the people to receive the Messenger of Allah (saw) and establish the Islamic State were the only reasons which prompted him to emigrate. It would be completely erroneous for anyone to conclude or even

to entertain the slightest thought that Muhammad (saw) emigrated from Makkah out of fear that Quraysh would kill him. He (saw) never gave the slightest consideration to the repression and harm that befell him and was more than happy to sacrifice his life in the way of Islam. This is a fact. His (saw) emigration to Madinah was simply the selfless pursuit of the Islamic da‘wah and the necessary establishment of the Islamic State to further that objective. It is clear that Quraysh had come to the decision to kill him for fear of his emigration to Madinah where he (saw) would enjoy its protection and power, but Quraysh, despite their efforts, failed in their bid to dispose of him. The emigration, as Quraysh feared, proved to be the turning point in the history of the da‘wah. It moved from the phase of inviting people to Islam, to the phase of establishing an Islamic society, a state ruling by Islam’s authority, inviting for it by means of evidence, proof and persuasion and by the force that would protect it from evil and oppressive forces.

## 12. Establishing The Islamic State

The Messenger of Allah (saw) eventually arrived in Madinah and was greeted by a huge number of its people, Muslims, polytheists and Jews alike. They were all eager to witness his awesome presence and he soon came to be surrounded by the Muslims who were all anxious to serve him and to offer him comfort and hospitality. They were ready to offer themselves to him (saw) and to the deen he had brought to them, they were ready to sacrifice their lives in the way of the Message of Islam. Everyone wanted the Messenger of Allah (saw) to lodge with him, but he (saw) left the reins of his she-camel free until it knelt by the storehouse of Sahl and Suhayl, sons of 'Amr. The Messenger of Allah (saw) subsequently bought it and built a Masjid and his houses around it. The building of the Masjid and the houses turned out to be an easy task, they were very modest and cheap to construct. The Masjid comprised of a large courtyard with its walls composed of bricks and soil. One part of the ceiling was covered in palm tree branches and the remainder left uncovered. Part of the Masjid served as shelter to the poor who did not have a home. The Masjid was never lit except during the 'isha' prayer, when torches of hay were used to illuminate it.

The houses of the Messenger of Allah (saw) were just as simple and modest as the Masjid itself except that they were more illuminated. Allah's Messenger (saw) lodged with Abi Ayub Khalid ibn Zayd al-Ansari while the Masjid and houses were being built and he moved in as soon as they were ready. He (saw) thought about the new life that he had sought, the way that the da'wah had moved from one stage to another, from the stage of culturing through the stage of interaction with the non-Islamic society to that of the eventual implementation of the rules of Islam on people. He (saw) thought about the new era which had dawned moving him away from calling for Islam and enduring aggression towards the phase of rule, authority and the force that was now able to protect and defend the Message of Islam. The Messenger of Allah (saw) ordered the building of the Masjid from the very first day and it was utilised for salah (prayers), meetings, consultation and a place where he looked after the people's affairs and from where he judged between them. He (saw) appointed Abu Bakr and 'Umar as his two assistants, saying, "My two assistants on Earth are Abu Bakr and 'Umar."

In their response the Muslims gathered around the Messenger of Allah (saw), they would always approach him for guidance and advice in all matters. He (saw) thus performed the duty of the Head of State, the Judge and the Commander-in-Chief of the army. Therefore he (saw) looked after the affairs of the Muslims, settled their disputes and appointed leaders to the army divisions, eventually sending them outside Madinah on military campaigns and missions.

Allah's Messenger (saw) founded the Islamic State from the very first day he arrived in Madinah and began to structure it by forming the society on a solid foundation as well as by gathering the appropriate force in order to be able to protect the State and convey the Message. With this accomplished, he (saw) could begin to remove the material obstacles that stood in the way of the spreading of Islam.

### 13. Establishing The Society

Allah (swt) has endowed the human being with the instinct of survival. One of the features of the survival instinct is for people to gather and live together, so the co-existence of people is a natural human disposition. However, this does not transform them into a society, simply a group, and they would remain a group unless they developed relationships that brought them a common interest and protected them from common threats. Only if such relationships that brought them common interests existed would they then become a society. However, these relationships would not make them a single society unless their viewpoint towards these relationships were united, once their thoughts had become united; and once their approval and disapproval towards these relationships became united when their feelings had become united, including their ways of dealing with problems that inevitably arise. Therefore, it is essential to look into the thoughts and feelings that dominate a society before forming an opinion about it, for they alone can determine and distinguish one society from another. On this basis, let us shed some light on the society of Madinah once the Messenger of Allah (saw) had arrived there.

At the time three groups lived in Madinah; the Muslims (Muhajireen and Ansar), who formed the biggest groups; the polytheists, from the Aus and Khazraj who did not embrace Islam; and a third group were the Jews who themselves were divided into four sections; one inside Madinah who were Banu Qaynuqa', and the other three outside Madinah, they were Banu Nadir, Khaybar and Banu Qurayzah. Even before Islam the Jews formed their own separate society from that of the society in Madinah. This was so because their concepts and emotions were different, as were the ways by which they conducted their affairs. The result of this was that the Jews were never part of the general society of Madinah even though they lived in and around the city. And as for the disbelievers, they constituted a minority and were overwhelmed by the Islamic atmosphere dominating Madinah. So their yielding to the Islamic concepts and emotions and to the rules of Islam was inevitable even if they did not embrace Islam. The Muhajireen and the Ansar were united by the Islamic 'aqeedah. Islam harmonised them, thus their concepts and emotions were the same - organising their lives and relationships on the basis of Islam was simply the only natural and inevitable outcome.

The Messenger of Allah (saw) began organising the relationships of the Muslims on the basis of the Islamic 'aqeedah. He (saw) invited them to form a brethren, a brethren that would have a tangible effect on their relationships between each other in their business dealings and life's affairs. It was with this policy in mind that he (saw) instituted his brotherhood with 'Ali ibn Abi Talib, his uncle Hamzah became the brother to his servant Zayd, and Abu Bakr and Kharijah ibn Zayd became brothers after a similar fashion. He (saw) then invited the Muhajireen and Ansar to form a similar brotherhood, so 'Umar ibn al-Khattab and 'Utbah ibn Malik al-Khazraji became brothers to each other, as did Talhah ibn 'Ubaydullah and Abu Ayub al-Ansari, and 'Abd al-Rahman ibn 'Auf and Sa'd ibn al-Rabi'i. This brotherhood had its material effect as well, for the Ansar had shown a great deal of generosity towards their brethren, the emigrants, which made the ties between them all the stronger. The Ansar offered them money and properties and shared everything with them, they traded and farmed together. The traders amongst the emigrants turned their hand to commerce, 'Abd al-Rahman ibn 'Auf used to sell butter and cheese, and others who were business minded did likewise. As for those who did not take up trading they went into farming, like Abu Bakr and 'Ali who worked the lands given to them by the Ansar. The Messenger of Allah (saw) said, "Whoever owns a piece of land should farm it or give it to his brothers." So the Muslims worked to earn their living. There was, though, a small group of Muslims who had no money, could find no

work and had nowhere to live. They were the needy, being neither emigrants nor Ansar. These were the Arabs who came to Madinah and who had embraced Islam. The Messenger of Allah (saw) took them into his care and housed them in the covered part of the Masjid, where they became known as the Ahl al-Suffah. They lived off the wealthy Muslims whom Allah (swt) had provided for generously. By doing so, Allah's Messenger (saw) managed to stabilise the Muslims' way of life and determine their relationships with each other on a solid footing. The Messenger of Allah (saw) thus established the society in Madinah on a solid foundation that stood in the way of disbelief and which was able to resist the conspiracies of the hypocrites and Jews. The Islamic society remained united throughout, and the Messenger of Allah (saw) became reassured by this unity among the Muslims.

As for the polytheists, they never produced any lasting effect on the structure of the society. At first they submitted to the Islamic rules and then they waned only to eventually vanish.

The Jews, who were to suffer the same fate, remained always a society apart, different from other societies even before Islam. When Islam's authority was established in Madinah differences deepened and the need to establish relations between the Muslims and the Jews on a specific basis became a necessity, so the Messenger of Allah (saw) determined the Muslims' position towards the other members of the society. In the light of this the Messenger of Allah (saw) wrote a document concerning the Muhajireen and the Ansar in which he made an agreement with the Jews establishing them in their religion and their property, and in which he stated their reciprocal obligations. He (saw) began the document as follows, "This is a document from Muhammad the Prophet, governing the relations between the believing Muslims of Quraysh and Yathrib, and those who followed them and joined them and fought alongside them. They are one Ummah to the exclusion of all people." He (saw) then mentioned how the relationship between the believers was to be constituted, he also mentioned the Jews during his talk concerning the relations between the believers, he (saw) said, "A believer shall not slay a believer for the sake of an disbeliever, nor shall he aid an disbeliever against a believer. Allah's covenant amongst them is one, the least of them is responsible. Believers are friends one to the other to the exclusion of outsiders. To the Jews who follow us belong help and equality. They shall not be wronged nor shall their enemies be aided. The peace of the believers is indivisible. No separate peace shall be made when believers are fighting in the way of Allah. Conditions must be fair to all." The Jews mentioned in this document were the ones who wanted to become subjects of the Islamic State, it was not addressed to the Jewish tribes living on the outskirts of Madinah. Thus any Jew wanting to become a subject of the State would enjoy the same rights and receive the same treatment, for he would then be considered a dhimmi (people of the covenant). As for the Jewish tribes mentioned in the document, they were referred to in the latter part of the document and included the Jews of Banu 'Auf and the Jews of Banu al-Najjar and so on.

Their position vis-<sup>^</sup>-vis the Islamic State was fixed by the document. It was clearly determined that their relationship with the Muslims would be based on the Islamic rule, that it would be subject to the authority of Islam and to safeguarding the interests of the State. Some of the points mentioned in the document were:

1. The close friends of the Jews are as themselves. None of them shall go out except with the permission of Muhammad (saw).
2. Yathrib shall be a sanctuary for the people of this document.
3. If any dispute or controversy likely to cause trouble should arise, it must be referred to Allah and to the Messenger of Allah.
4. Quraysh and their helpers shall not be given protection.

The document of Allah's Messenger (saw) determined the position of the Jewish tribes neighbouring Madinah. It imposed on them the condition that they were not to go out of Madinah without his (saw) permission, i.e. the State's permission. They were forbidden from violating the sanctuary of Madinah by war or by helping in a war, they were also forbidden from helping Quraysh or those who helped Quraysh and were bound by the conditions of the covenant to refer any dispute arising about the content of the document to the Messenger of Allah (saw). The Jews agreed to the conditions laid out in the document and all those tribes mentioned in it signed to that effect; they were Banu 'Auf, Banu al-Najjar, Banu al-Harith, Banu Sa'ida, Banu Jushm, Banu al-Aus and Banu Tha'labah. Banu Qurayzah, Banu al-Nadir and Banu Qaynuqa' did not sign at the time, but did so at a later date, and they all willingly submitted to the conditions laid down in the document. By signing this document the Messenger of Allah (saw) firmly fixed the relationships within the fledgling Islamic State. The relationship between the State and the neighbouring Jewish tribes was also firmly established on a clear and specific basis. In both instances though, it was Islam that would be the judge and arbiter. It was at this stage that Allah's Messenger (saw) became reassured knowing that the Islamic society was now properly founded and that he was to a certain degree safe from any immediate acts of treachery by the Jews, so he (saw) began the task of removing the material obstacles that stood in the way of the Message of Islam by preparing for war.

## 14. The Preparation For Fighting

When the Messenger of Allah (saw) was assured that the Islamic society was set on a solid foundation, and once he had signed treaties with the neighbouring Jewish tribes, he set about preparing the grounds in Madinah for jihad, for it is the duty of the Islamic State to implement Islam in the whole of the land under its rule and to convey the Message of Islam beyond its borders. Conveying the Message of Islam is by no means comparable to missionary work, it instead comprises the inviting of mankind to Islam, culturing them with its concepts and rules, and the removal of any material obstacle that stands in the way of the Message through the employment of a force capable of doing so.

Quraysh had always represented a material obstacle barring the progress of the Message of Islam, a task force thus had to be prepared to overcome it. Bearing this in mind and with the objective of spreading Islam outside Madinah, the Messenger of Allah (saw) began building his army. He (saw) took several deliberate steps by organising some expeditions designed to challenge Quraysh and frighten both the hypocrites and the Jews in Madinah and the nearby surroundings. In four months he (saw) dispatched three units outside Madinah. He sent Hamzah to the sea-shore in the neighbourhood of al-'Is at the head of thirty riders from the emigrants, none of the helpers took part. Hamzah met Abu Jahl ibn Hisham with three hundred riders on the shore and was about to fight him when Majdi ibn 'Amr al-Juhani intervened between them so the people separated without fighting. The Messenger of Allah (saw) sent Muhammad ibn 'Ubaydah ibn al-Harith with sixty riders from the Muhajireen, there not being a single one of the Ansar among them. He encountered Abu Sufyan at the head of more than two hundred riders in the valley of Rabigh. Again no fighting took place except that Sa'd ibn Abi Waqqas shot an arrow on that day. Allah's Messenger (saw) also sent Sa'd ibn Abi Waqqas with twenty riders towards Makkah, but they returned without fighting. These expeditions helped create an atmosphere of war in Madinah, and they also served to frighten the life out of Quraysh who began to seriously feel the threat coming from Allah's Messenger (saw). He (saw) did not stop at that, but went out raiding himself. Twelve months after his arrival in Madinah he (saw) went forth on a raid looking for Quraysh and Banu Damrah until he reached Waddan. He (saw) did not meet Quraysh that day, instead Banu Damrah made peace with him. After that the Messenger of Allah (saw) went raiding at the head of a contingent of two hundred riders from the Muhajir and Ansar until they reached Buwat in the neighbourhood of Radwa. They were making for a caravan composed of two thousand five hundred cattle protected by one hundred fighters led by Umayyah ibn Khalaf. But he (saw) failed to intercept the caravan due to the fact that it had traversed a different route than the one normally used. Three months after returning from the expedition to Buwat, Abu Salmah ibn 'Abd al-Asad was left in charge of Madinah and the Messenger of Allah (saw) undertook another raid at the head of two hundred plus Muslims until he reached al-'Ushayrah in the valley of Yanbu' where he stopped during the month of Jumada al-Ula and resided until some days of Jumada al-Akhirah had passed. This was in the second year of Hijrah. The reason for his camping there was that he (saw) was waiting for a caravan headed by Abu Sufyan, but once again he missed his target. It was not entirely a wasted effort though, because the Messenger of Allah (saw) gained from his trip a peace treaty with Bani Mudlaj and their allies from Bani Damrah.

He (saw) had only been back in Madinah for ten days when Kurz ibn Jabir al-Fahri raided the pasturing camels of Madinah. Allah's Messenger (saw) went out in search of him, Kurz being one of the allies of Quraysh. Allah's Messenger (saw) reached the valley of Safwan in the

neighbourhood of Badr, but Kurz escaped him and could not be overtaken. This was the first raid of Badr.

That is how Allah's Messenger (saw) began defying Quraysh with his army, by roaming the Peninsula and sending out expeditions. Although no fighting took place, Allah's Messenger (saw) achieved considerable gains which paved the way for still greater battles, since these raids served as military exercises for the Muslim army and prepared them for war. They also sent shivers down the spines of the Jews and the hypocrites of Madinah and discouraged them from entertaining any thoughts about causing trouble. He (saw) succeeded in demoralising Quraysh by defying them whilst boosting the morale of the Muslims a great deal. He (saw) also formed and enforced a blockade on the caravans of Quraysh on their way to al-Sham by signing treaties with the tribes encamped between Madinah and the Red Sea coast, such as Banu Damrah, Banu Mudlaj and others.

## 15. The Outbreak Of Fighting

The Messenger of Allah (saw) settled in Madinah, where he at once began to implement Islamic rules on the society. It was at this time that the Revelation concerning legislation descended. He (saw) strengthened the fundamentals of the Islamic State and built the society on the basis of Islam and its systems. He (saw) created a brotherhood amongst the Muslims and it was then that Islam came to life as a rule and as a Shari'ah adopted by a society that took on the task of spreading its Message. The number of Muslims increased substantially and they became a force to be reckoned with, individuals and groups alike embraced Islam every other day, Jews and disbelievers included.

Once the Messenger of Allah (saw) was confident about the status of Islam in Madinah he began to think about spreading the Message outside to the rest of the Arabian Peninsula. However, he knew that Quraysh formed a formidable obstacle in the way of the da'wah, a material obstacle where the means of persuasive discussion would fall on deaf ears. Therefore, the obstacle would have to be overwhelmed by force. The Messenger of Allah (saw) was unable to remove this material obstacle when he was in Makkah because Islam did not have a State, capable of generating the required material force necessary to cancel out that obstacle. However, since the establishment of the Islamic State, the Messenger of Allah (saw) was able to work to remove such material obstacles by the considerable means that were now at his disposal. With the means to enforce such a policy now available to him, all he (saw) had to do was to prepare the army, build up the war fervour and adopt a new policy to spread the da'wah. This is the reason why he (saw) initiated expeditions and raids, some of which he took part in personally, so as to defy Quraysh with a show of force.

The last expedition was that of 'Abdullah ibn Jahsh which served as an introduction to the battle of Badr. The Messenger of Allah (saw) sent 'Abdullah ibn Jahsh out with a group of Muhajireen during the month of Rajab in the second year of Hijra. He (saw) wrote him a letter, and ordered him not to look at it until he had journeyed for two days whereupon he should act on its instructions, but he should not put pressure on any of his companions. When 'Abdullah had traveled for two days he opened the letter and read it, this is what it said, "When you have read this letter of mine, proceed until you reach Nakhlah between Makkah and Ta'if. Lie there for Quraysh and find out for us what they are up to." He told his companions about the letter and the task assigned to him, he also informed them about Allah's Messenger's instructions not to put any pressure on anyone. They all agreed to continue and so he proceeded with his companions. They traveled together as a group until Sa'd ibn Abi Waqqas al-Zuhri and 'Utbah ibn Ghazwan became separated when they went to look for the camel that they had been riding on in turns and which had become lost. Eventually they were to fall prisoners to Quraysh. 'Abdullah ibn Jahsh camped in Nakhlah watching out for Quraysh and while there one of their caravans carrying merchandise passed by. 'Abdullah and his companions took council among themselves to decide what to do because this was the last day of the sacred month of Rajab and Allah's Messenger (saw) had not issued any instructions about fighting. They said to each other, "By Allah, if you leave them alone tonight they will get into the sacred area and will be safe from you; and if you kill them, you will kill them in the sacred month." At first they were hesitant and feared to attack them. Then they encouraged each other and decided to fight. One of the Muslims shot the leader of the caravan 'Amr ibn al Hadrami and killed him. The Muslims took two prisoners and escorted the caravan to Madinah. When they came to the Messenger of Allah (saw) he said to them, "I did not order you to fight in the sacred month." Then he (saw) retained the caravan and the two prisoners refusing to take anything from them. That was the conclusion

of ‘Abdullah ibn Jahsh’s expedition whom the Messenger of Allah (saw) had sent to watch Quraysh, but which had instead fought, killed, and imprisoned some of their men and taken the caravan as booty during the sacred month. So what would be the Islamic verdict on this action? This was what concerned Allah’s Messenger (saw) and hence that is the reason why he held the prisoners and the booty in suspense, to wait for the verdict from Allah (swt) on the matter. Quraysh grabbed the opportunity of using the issue as a source of propaganda and scandal against Islam and Muhammad (saw). They trumpeted among all the Arabs that Muhammad (saw) and his companions had violated the sacred month, shed blood, seized properties and imprisoned people. Arguments arose in Makkah between Quraysh and the Muslims who had remained there, in reply the Muslims said that their brothers had attacked the caravan in Sha’ban and not Rajab, but their response was not convincing and failed to quell the propaganda launched by Quraysh against Islam. The Jews took up the argument as well and began disgracing and slandering ‘Abdullah ibn Jahsh’s action. The propaganda took its toll on the Muslims, meanwhile Allah’s Messenger (saw) kept silent awaiting the Revelation and Allah’s verdict on the affair until Allah (swt) revealed in surah al-Baqarah, "They will ask you concerning fighting in the sacred month. Say, fighting therein is a grave offence, but graver is it in the sight of Allah to prevent access to the path of Allah, to deny Him, to prevent access to the sacred Masjid and drive out its people therefrom. Tumult and oppression are worse than killing. Nor will they cease to fight you until they turn you back from your deen if they can." [TMQ 2:217]

When this verse was revealed the Muslims rejoiced and Allah’s Messenger (saw) then proceeded to distribute the booty from the caravan and exchange the two prisoners for Sa’d ibn Abi Waqqas al-Zuhri and ‘Utbah ibn Ghazwan. These verses came as a slap in the face of Quraysh’s propaganda against Islam. The Qur’an answered Quraysh, who had asked you, was not fighting in the sacred month a grave sin, but keeping people back from the way of the sacred Masjid and driving its people away from it was far more serious than fighting and killing in the sacred month. Quraysh’s actions of oppressing the Muslims for their deen by threatening, torturing and persecuting them was far worse than fighting and killing in the sacred month, or any other month for that matter. Quraysh had ceaselessly fought them in an attempt to turn them back from their deen, therefore the Muslims were entitled to fight Quraysh in the sacred month and nothing could be held against them. It was Quraysh who were committing the graver offence by standing in the way of the Islamic da‘wah, by keeping people back from the way of Allah, by disbelieving in Allah, driving out the people of the sacred Masjid and persecuting the Muslims. They deserved to be fought in any and every month, sacred or otherwise. The fight that ‘Abdullah ibn Jahsh initiated against Quraysh was therefore neither a disgrace to him nor to the Muslims. Thus the expedition of ‘Abdullah ibn Jahsh was a turning point in the history of Islam. It marked a profound change of policy in the way that the Islamic da‘wah was to be conducted. Waqid ibn ‘Abdullah al-Tamimi shot the leader of the caravan and killed him, that was the first blood the Muslims shed in the way of Allah (swt). Until the verses of jihad were revealed commanding the Muslims to fight anytime and anywhere, armed combat during the sacred months had been unauthorised, from that time on though the rules were different. Thus the previous prevention against fighting in the sacred months was abrogated by the generality of the verses of fighting.

## 16. Life In Madinah

Islam has a specific way of life derived from its concepts concerning life and that is the Islamic culture which differs from all other cultures. It is characterised by three points: firstly, it is founded on the basis of the Islamic 'aqeedah; secondly, the criterion of actions in life is based on Allah's commands and prohibitions, i.e. life is based on halal and haram; thirdly, the meaning of happiness is to gain Allah's pleasure, i.e. permanent peace of mind cannot be achieved without first gaining Allah's pleasure. That is the Islamic way of life, the kind of life Muslims look up to and aim to achieve. In order to make the above possible, it is essential to have a State that implements Islam fully and executes its rules without exception. When the Muslims emigrated to Madinah they led a distinguished way of life, with the Islamic 'aqeedah as its basis. The verses of the Qur'an concerning the social and penal codes came to be revealed at this time, in addition to the verses concerning other matters of worship which had not been revealed before. Zakat and siyam (fasting) were decreed in the second year of the hijrah. Adhaan too was decreed and the people of Madinah listened to it being delivered in the sweet voice of Bilal ibn Rabah five times daily. Seventeen months after the arrival of Allah's Messenger (saw) to Madinah, the qiblah (direction of prayer) was transferred to the Ka'bah. Then the verses of Divine Legislation concerning matters of worship, diet, morals, relationships and penalties were revealed. Khamr (intoxicants) and the flesh of swine were forbidden, and the verses concerning the penal and criminal code were also revealed, as were those concerning business dealings, the complete forbidding of riba in all its guises and so on. Everytime the verses dealing with people's life affairs were revealed to Allah's Messenger (saw), he explained them and ordered the Muslims to abide by them. He (saw) looked after the Muslims' affairs by sorting out their problems and settling their disputes by his sayings, actions and by his silence over what happened right in front of him, for his (saw) speech, actions and silence are all sources of the Shari'ah as Allah (swt) says in surah al-Najm,

"Nor does he speak (anything) of (his own) desire. It is no less than Revelation sent down to him." [TMQ 53:3-4]

Life in Madinah went on following that course with its distinct viewpoint, i.e. the Islamic one. The Islamic society, which is different from any other, was alive and flourishing then, thriving on the Islamic concepts and emotions and now that the rules of Islam were being implemented to the full it, offered solutions and guidelines to all the Muslims. The Messenger of Allah (saw) was very pleased to see that the da'wah had reached this stage with the Muslims settled in their deen, abiding by its rules individually and collectively without fearing any harm or persecution. They solved their problems according to Allah's rules, always referring new matters that had arisen to the Messenger of Allah (saw) and never stepping out of line. They applied Allah's rules in every action and from this did they achieve happiness and peace of mind. Many of the Muslims shadowed the Messenger of Allah (saw) in order to learn from him, to memorise the Qur'an and acquire knowledge. Islam grew and spread, and the Muslims became stronger and stronger by the day.

## 17. Arguments Of The Jews And Christians

The non-Muslims became aware of the strength and power of the Muslims within a short space of time. They realised that their strength was deeply rooted in hearts never short of sacrifice in the way of Islam, hearts that endured all types of suffering and persecution, hearts that were always ready to give up life itself for Islam. There they were in Madinah enjoying their deen and implementing its rules, a deen that was reaching new heights each day with the Muslims feeling true contentment and happiness. The enemies of Islam could not stomach this, and signs of revulsion began to outwardly manifest themselves in the neighbouring Jews. Their fears grew and they began to rethink and reconsider their position towards Muhammad (saw) and his companions now that the Muslims were becoming unshakable and many people were responding to the call of Islam. The Jews were enraged by those amongst them who converted to Islam. They feared that Islam would infiltrate their ranks and spread among them and so they attacked Islam, its beliefs and rules. Heated argument and a war of nerves ensued between the Muslims and Jews, this was to develop into a much fiercer dispute than the Muslims had to endure with Quraysh in Makkah. Conspiracy, hypocrisy and their furtive knowledge of the former Prophets and Messengers were the main weapons used by the Jews in their intellectual war against Muhammad (saw) and his companions. Some of their rabbis pretended to embrace Islam, sat with the Muslims and faked their piety. Soon they were to show signs of doubt and uncertainty by asking Muhammad (saw) questions in the hope of shaking the conviction of the Muslims in their 'aqeedah and the Message of Truth which Islam stood for. The Jews were joined by a group of the Aus and Khazraj who embraced Islam hypocritically in the hope of causing animosity and confusion amongst the Muslims. The argument between Jews and Muslims turned into physical confrontation at times despite the oath between them. A vivid example of the Jewish stubbornness and hatred was reflected in Abu Bakr's loss of temper on one occasion, bearing in mind that Abu Bakr was a man noted for his wisdom, patience and calm character. It is reported that Abu Bakr called on a Jew named Finhas to fear Allah and embrace Islam. Finhas replied, "We are not poor compared to Allah but He humbles Himself to us; we are independent of Him while He needs us. Were He independent of us He would not ask us to lend Him our money as your master pretends, prohibiting you to take interest and allowing us to. Had He been independent of us He would not have given us interest." Finhas was referring to Allah's (swt) saying,

"Who is it that will loan to Allah a beautiful loan, which Allah will double unto his credit and multiply many times? It is Allah that gives (you) want or plenty, and to Him is your return."  
[TMQ 2:245]

Abu Bakr could not control his anger, he was so enraged that he hit Finhas in the face and said, "By whom my destiny rests, were it not for the treaty between us I would cut off your head, you enemy of Allah!"

The argument between the Muslims and Jews became very heated and went on for quite sometime. Meanwhile, about sixty Christian riders from Najran arrived in Madinah. They must have heard about the animosity between the Jews and Muslims and hoped that the rift would deepen so that Christianity could come to reign and rid itself from the old religion and the new deen, which were both challenging it for supremacy according to their claims. This group of Christians were in touch with the Muslims and the Jews. Allah's Messenger (saw) regarded them, together with the Jews, as 'People of the Book' and invited them both to Islam. He (saw) recited to them Allah's (swt) saying,

"Say: O people of the Book! Come to common terms as between us and you that we worship none but Allah; that we associate no partners with Him; that we erect not, from among ourselves, Lords and patrons other than Allah. If then they turn back, say: Bear witness that we (at least) are Muslims (bowing to Allah's will)." [TMQ 3:64]

The Jews and the Christians asked him (saw) about the Prophets he believed in and he recited to them Allah's saying,

"Say you: We believe in Allah, and the revelation given to us, and to Ibrahim, Ismail, Isaac, Jacob, and the tribes, and that given to Moses and Jesus and that given to (all) Prophets from their Lord: We make no difference between one and another of them: And we bow to Allah (in Islam)." [TMQ 2:136]

They could find nothing more to say to him. Their hearts would accept the evidence and the Truth was revealed, but they would not believe out of fear for their positions, reputation and status, some of them in fact admitted this. It has been narrated that Abu Harithah, one of the Christian delegation from Najran and one of the most knowledgeable scholars, confessed to a friend that he was convinced by what Muhammad (saw) had said, and when his friend asked him what prevented him from believing, he replied, "The way these people (the Romans or Byzantines) treated us. They have given us titles, paid us subsidies, and honoured us. But they are absolutely opposed to him, and if I were to accept him they would take from us all that you see." This proved that what prevented them from true belief was pig-headedness, stubbornness, selfish petty personal benefit and interest. Then the Messenger of Allah (saw) invited the Christians to a mutual invocation of a curse if they opposed him and he read to them Allah's saying,

"If anyone disputes in this matter with you, now after (full) knowledge has come to you, say: Come! Let us gather together, our sons and your sons, our women and your women, ourselves and yourselves: Then let us earnestly pray, and invoke the curse of Allah on those who lie!" [TMQ 3:61]

They took council among themselves after which they declared that they had decided not to resort to cursing and to leave him (saw) to his deen whilst they would return to theirs. In addition to this they asked him to send a man whom he (saw) could trust to decide between them in certain financial matters in dispute among them. So the Messenger of Allah (saw) sent Abu 'Ubaydah ibn al-Jarrah to judge between them according to Islam.

The force of the Islamic da'wah, the power of the Islamic belief and the strength of argument emanating as it did from the truth managed to defeat all the arguments raised by the hypocrites, the Jews and the Christians. Their non-Islamic concepts soon vanished and only Islam remained as the overriding inherently correct ideology, with people now continuously discussing its rules and inviting others to it. So Islam became deeply rooted and its banner engulfed all ideological and ruling matters. However, the hearts of the hypocrites and the Jews remained bent on hatred towards the Muslims, begrudging and despising them all the more. Nevertheless, the authority of Islam in Madinah and the stability and solid foundation of the Islamic society dominated everything. The various expeditions and the show of strength displayed by the Muslims effectively managed to silence all the sick minds. The Word of Allah (swt) reigned supreme and the enemies of Islam were forced to remain quiet and to submit to the authority of Islam.

## 18. The Battle Of Badr

In the second year of Hijrah the Messenger of Allah (saw) set out on the 8th Ramadhan with three hundred and five of his companions mounted on seventy camels, 'Amr ibn Umm Maktum was assigned to lead the prayer whilst Abu Lubabah was left in charge of Madinah. They rode the camels in turn heading towards a caravan led by Abu Sufyan. As they marched on they sought news of the caravan until they had reached the valley of Dafran where they settled, and news reached them there that Quraysh had set out from Makkah to protect their caravan. The whole affair then assumed different proportions for it was no longer simply a raid on a caravan, the question was whether to confront Quraysh or not. So Allah's Messenger (saw) consulted the Muslims. Abu Bakr followed then by 'Umar voiced their opinions respectively, then al-Miqdad ibn 'Amr arose and said, "O Messenger of Allah! Go where Allah tells you, for we are with you. We shall not say as the children of Israel said to Moses 'You and your Lord go and fight and we will stay at home', but you and your Lord go and fight and we will fight with you." The Muslims then went silent, and he (saw) said, "Give me advice O men!" by which he meant the Ansar who had paid allegiance to him at al-'Aqabah. They had pledged to protect him as they protected their wives and children, with the stipulation that they were not responsible to fight with him outside Madinah. When the Ansar sensed that he (saw) meant them, Sa'd ibn Mu'adh who was holding their banner said, "It seems as if you mean us, O Messenger of Allah." He (saw) said, "Yes." Sa'd said, "We believe in you, we declare your truth, and we witness that what you have brought us is the truth, and we have given you our word and agreement to hear and obey; so go where you wish, we are with you; and by He who sent you, if you were to ask us to cross this sea and you plunged into it, we would plunge into it with you; not a man would stay behind. We do not dislike the idea of meeting our enemy tomorrow. We are experienced in war, trustworthy in combat. It may well be that Allah will let us show you something which will bring you joy, so take us along with Allah's blessing." The Messenger of Allah (saw) was delighted with Sa'd's words and said, "Forward in good heart, for Allah had promised me one of the two parties, and by Allah, it is as though I now saw the enemy lying prostrate."

The Messenger of Allah (saw) and his companions journeyed until they had nearly reached Badr. They realised that Quraysh's caravan was nearby and so 'Ali, al-Zubayr ibn 'Awwam, and Sa'd ibn Abi Waqqas with a number of his companions were sent to the well at Badr in search of news. They returned with two young men from Quraysh whom they questioned. They disclosed the number of Quraysh at between nine hundred to a thousand men and that the nobles of Quraysh were out in force to protect the caravan. The Messenger of Allah (saw) realised that they were facing a force which was three times the size of his own and that he would be in for a fierce battle. He (saw) informed the Muslims that Makkah had thrown out the pieces of its liver (or the best of her sons) into the battle and that they should harden their resolve. The Muslims vowed to stand up to the enemy, they settled by the well of Badr where they built a cistern and filled it with water. Then they stopped up all the other wells so that they would have plenty of water and the enemy would have nothing to drink, at the same time they also built a hut for the Messenger of Allah (saw) to reside in. Quraysh took up their positions and the skirmishes of battle began. Al-Aswad ibn 'Abd al-Asad stepped forward to destroy the cistern that the Muslims had built. Hamzah dealt with him by smiting him and sending his foot flying. He fell on his back with blood streaming from his foot and Hamzah followed him and smote him, killing him near the cistern. Then after him 'Utbah ibn Rabia'a stepped forth between his brother Shayba and his son al-Walid; Hamzah, 'Ali and 'Ubaydah ibn al-Harith stepped forward to meet them. Hamzah quickly dealt Shayba a blow and 'Ali soon disposed of al-Walid. Then Hamzah and 'Ali turned on 'Utbah who stood firm against

'Ubaydah and they dispatched him, carrying off their injured companion afterwards. Then the two sides advanced and drew near each other on Friday morning on the 17th of Ramadhan. The Messenger of Allah (saw) straightened the ranks and incited the Muslims to fight. The Muslims were encouraged by Allah's Messenger's words and went forward. The fighting broke out fiercely and Quraysh's heads went flying from their bodies, the Muslims becoming stronger in belief all the time chanting 'Ahad ! Ahad !' (the One the One). Allah's Messenger (saw) stood in the middle of the melee, took a handful of pebbles and threw them at Quraysh saying, "Foul be those faces!" Then he (saw) ordered his companions to charge and they duly obliged until the battle was over and the foe was routed. The Muslims emerged victorious, they slew many warriors and tribal leaders of Quraysh and made captive many more. Quraysh fled the battlefield and the Muslims returned to Madinah having achieved a truly great victory.

## **19. The Expulsion Of Banu Qaynuqa'**

The Jews had held the Muslims in contempt before the battle of Badr. Ever since the Muslim victory their contempt and hatred increased all the more. They began plotting and scheming against the Muslims whenever they had the chance, and cared nothing about breaking the treaty that they had signed with them. The Muslims' response was harsh and firm every time the Jews stepped out of line. A typical tale of Jewish mischief is reflected in the incident that took place in the market of Banu Qaynuqa'. A Muslim woman went there and sat at a jeweler's shop with her ornaments. A Jewish man approached her from behind and nailed the back of her dress with a thorn. When she arose her garment came off and the Jews all laughed at her insultingly. She called for help and a nearby Muslim leapt at the jeweler and killed him, then the Jews assembled together and killed the Muslim. The family of the Muslim martyr called on the Muslims to punish the Jews, they did so and a fight thus ensued between them. Allah's Messenger (saw) had asked the Jews to stop their provocation and mischief, but they showed signs of rebellion and defiance so he went out with the Muslims and surrounded Banu Qaynuqa' from every angle besieging them in their quarters. The Messenger of Allah (saw) decided after consulting the Muslims to kill them all for their treachery. However, 'Abdullah ibn Ubayy ibn Salul (one of the leaders of the hypocrites), who was on good terms with both Muslims and Jews, went to him (saw) and pleaded with him saying, "O Muhammad, be lenient with them." Allah's Messenger (saw) ignored him at first and he repeated the plea, but the Messenger of Allah (saw) still ignored him. Then 'Abdullah ibn Ubayy ibn Salul persisted in his pleading, so Allah's Messenger (saw) decided to grant him his wish as a favour to him provided Banu Qaynuqa' left Madinah. They departed from Madinah heading north until they reached Adhra'at in al-Sham.

## 20. Quelling Internal Disorder

The Muslims, outnumbered and badly equipped, entered into warfare against Quraysh clashing victoriously with them in their first battle, the battle of Badr. The result of this victory shook Quraysh so violently that they almost lost their senses. The victory of the Muslims over the non-Muslims helped to kill off all the Jewish plots, schemes and civil strife inside Madinah, and as a direct result some Jews were forced to sign a peace treaty and others were expelled from Madinah. The might of the Muslims increased, but Quraysh never rested and wasted no time in preparing for revenge. In the battle of Uhud, in the next year, Quraysh managed just that, when the Muslim marksmen guarding the mujahideen's rear disobeyed the instructions of the leader in their haste to loot the temporarily fleeing ranks of Quraysh. Quraysh were overjoyed, and the Muslims returned to Madinah heartbroken and defeated despite the fact that after the battle they gave chase up to Hamra' al-Asad (about eight miles from Madinah).

The defeat of the Muslims had several repercussions, it caused open sedition by groups inside Madinah as the authority of the Muslims was deemed to have been undermined, and many tribes outside Madinah, who prior to Uhud would never have dared step out of line, also showed signs of rebellion. The Arabs who lived outside Madinah began to think about challenging Muhammad (saw); so did the Jews and the hypocrites living within Madinah and they began to provoke the Muslims.

The Messenger of Allah (saw) was anxious to learn about his enemies machinations, inside and outside Madinah, in order to counter them. He (saw) also aimed to restore the standing, prestige and the might of the Muslims by crushing any attempt to belittle or harm them.

One month after the battle of Uhud news reached the Messenger of Allah (saw) that Banu Asad wanted to raid Madinah and loot the herds of cattle grazing around the city. So Allah's Messenger (saw) decided to raid Banu Asad in their stronghold before they could get a chance to raid Madinah. This was to be a pre-emptive strike. He (saw) summoned Abu Salmah ibn 'Abd al-Asad and appointed him at the head of an expedition of one hundred and fifty warriors, among whom were a great number of the best Muslim fighters like Abu Ubaydah ibn Jarrah, Sa'd ibn Abi Waqqas, Usaid ibn Hudayr and others. In order to keep their mission a secret and retain the element of surprise, Allah's Messenger (saw) ordered them to travel by night and hide during the day, taking a different route from that usually taken by travelers. Abu Salmah set off until he reached Banu Asad. He and his men surrounded them at dawn and then raided them while calling his men to jihad. They soon defeated Banu Asad, took their wealth as booty and returned to Madinah victorious and proud, thus re-establishing the Muslims' might and reminding everyone of Islam's grandeur and authority.

News also reached the Messenger of Allah (saw) that Khalid ibn Sufyan al-Hodhali was encamped in 'Urnah or Nakhlah gathering and recruiting people to raid Madinah. So he (saw) summoned 'Abdullah ibn Anees and sent him on an exploratory mission to try and gather news about Khalid's movements. 'Abdullah set off and soon met up with Khalid who asked him, "Who is the man?" He said, "'Abdullah. I am an Arab who heard you were gathering people to fight Muhammad and that is why I am here." Khalid confessed that he was recruiting people to raid Madinah. They walked for a while and chatted, then when the two were isolated from other people, 'Abdullah seized his chance to draw his sword and deal him a fatal blow. He returned to Madinah and informed the Messenger of Allah (saw) about his adventure. With the death of Khalid, Banu Lihyan of Hadhayl abandoned their plan to raid

Madinah. The Messenger of Allah (saw) therefore succeeded in neutralising and removing Khalid's threat, and the threat from many other quarters that loomed over Madinah.

However, these events did not stop some Arabs from continuing to show disdain towards the authority of the Muslims in the wake of the battle of Uhud. A group of people from a tribe neighbouring Hadhayl came to Madinah and told the Messenger of Allah (saw) that they were very keen to learn about Islam and requested that he send to them a group of his companions to teach them Islam and read to them the Qur'an. He (saw) ordered six of his senior companions to accompany them. They set off until they reached the wells of Hadhayl in a place called al-Raji'. The men betrayed the Sahabah and summoned the people of Hadhayl against them. The six Muslims were caught by surprise and found themselves surrounded by Hadhayl who charged on them. The Muslims drew their swords and fought until three of them were killed and the other three surrendered and were taken prisoners. Hadhayl took the three prisoners to Makkah to sell them to Quraysh. On their way to Makkah one of the prisoners, 'Abdullah ibn Tariq, seized the opportunity to break free and managed to get hold of his sword to fight, but he was soon overpowered and killed. The other two prisoners were eventually sold in Makkah. One of them, Zayd ibn al-Dathnah, was bought by Safwan ibn Umayyah in order to kill him in revenge for his father Umayyah ibn Khalaf. When Zayd was brought to be killed Abu Sufyan asked him, "I adjure you by Allah, Zayd, don't you wish that Muhammad (saw) was with us now in your place so that we might cut off his head, and that you were with your family?" Zayd replied, "By Allah, I do not wish that Muhammad now were in the place he occupies and that a thorn could hurt him, and that I were sitting with my family." Abu Sufyan was astonished and used to say, "I have never seen a man who is so loved as Muhammad's companions love him." Zayd was then killed.

Khubayb, the second companion brought to Makkah, was imprisoned until they brought him out to crucify him. He asked them to give him time to make a couple of rak'ahs and they agreed. He performed his salah by offering two excellent bowings and then turned to the people saying, "Were it not that you would think that I only delayed out of fear of death I would have prolonged my prayer." Then they raised him on the wood and when they had bound him, he looked angrily at them and shouted, "O Allah! Reckon them by number and kill them one by one. Let none of them escape." Those present shuddered from his cry and then they killed him. Allah's Messenger (saw) was very saddened by the death of the six companions, as were all the Muslims. What made the Muslims even sadder was the manner in which Hadhayl had displayed their contempt and disregard to their companions.

Allah's Messenger (saw) thought hard about this state of affairs and it was while he was deep in thought that a man called Abu Bara' 'Amir ibn Malik (the 'Player with the Spears') arrived in Madinah. The Messenger of Allah (saw) explained Islam to him and invited him to accept it. He would not commit himself, yet he was not far from Islam and never showed any signs of hostility towards the deen. He told Allah's Messenger (saw), "If you were to send some of your companions to the people of Najd and they invited them to your affair, I have good hopes that they would give you a favourable answer." Allah's Messenger (saw) feared that his companions would be killed by the people of Najd just like those who had been betrayed by Hadhayl, so he decided against granting Abu Bara' his wish. However, Abu Bara' convinced him that he would go as a surety for them and said, "Let them be sent to invite men to your deen, I will protect them." Abu Bara' was a man of good repute, and his words carried weight, any man protected by him would not fear to be betrayed.

So the Messenger of Allah (saw) sent al-Mundhir ibn 'Amr with forty of his companions from the best of the Muslims. They set off until they had reached the well of Ma'unah, from there they sent a messenger with a letter from the Messenger of Allah (saw) to 'Amir ibn

Tufayl. When the messenger reached him he rushed at him and killed him before he had even looked at the letter, then he called out Banu 'Aamir to fight the Muslims, but they refused to do what he wanted saying that they would not violate the promise of security which Abu Bara' had given the Muslims. Then 'Amir appealed to other tribes and they surrounded the Muslims whilst they were with their camels. Seeing this, the Muslims drew their swords and fought to the last man. All were killed except two. The Messenger of Allah (saw) was very saddened by this, as were all the Muslims who were deeply shocked.

The Messenger of Allah (saw) thought long and hard about how to deal with those Arabs and how to re-establish the Muslims' high standing and dignity. He (saw) realised, however, that Madinah itself was affected, so he opted to try to deal firstly with the State's internal disturbances; once he had ensured that stability had returned to Madinah, then he would turn to the Arabs and other external affairs.

The battle of Uhud, together with the events of Raji' and Beer Ma'unah once again undermined the authority and standing of the Muslims in the eyes of the hypocrites and the Jews. They began plotting against the Messenger of Allah (saw) and they waited for a suitable opportunity to deal him a bad turn. Allah's Messenger (saw) gradually divulged their intentions until he had managed to learn about their conspiracies. Then he (saw) sent Muhammad ibn Maslamah to them and he said, "The Messenger of Allah sent me to you to tell you to leave his country, for you have breached the oath he made with you by attempting to betray him. You have ten days to leave; anyone seen here afterwards will have his neck struck off!". Banu Nadir would have left had it not been for 'Abdullah ibn Ubayy prodding them to stay; Huyayy ibn Akhtab also encouraged them to remain in their forts. The ten days expired but Banu Nadir remained in their homes, thus Allah's Messenger (saw) fought them until they asked him to spare their lives on condition that they retained all the possessions which they could carry on their camels. They finally set off leaving behind all that they owned from their lands, palm trees and armour. The Messenger of Allah (saw) divided their properties among the Muhajir to the exclusion of the Ansar, except for two men who were Abu Dujanah and Sahl ibn Hanif who complained of poverty. In expelling Banu Nadir, the Messenger of Allah (saw) managed to quell the internal unrest and restore the dignity and high status of the Muslims.

Turning once again to foreign policy the Messenger of Allah (saw) went forth to keep his appointment with Quraysh in a last battle of Badr, but Quraysh did not meet him there. This was one year after Uhud and Allah's Messenger (saw) remembered what Abu Sufyan had said, "Today in exchange for the day of Badr; our meeting place is Badr next year." He (saw) stressed the importance of meeting Abu Sufyan so he (saw) prepared the Muslims for battle. He (saw) left 'Abdullah ibn 'Abdullah ibn Salul in charge of Madinah and set off with the Muslims until they reached Badr. There they set up camp waiting for Quraysh ready to do battle with them. Quraysh, headed by Abu Sufyan, left Makkah with more than two thousand men, but they soon returned. The Messenger of Allah (saw) remained in Badr for eight consecutive days waiting for Quraysh, but they never turned up. Finally news reached him that Quraysh had returned to Makkah. So he (saw) journeyed back with the Muslims to Madinah after realising handsome profits from their trading at Badr. The Muslims returned victorious despite the fact that no fighting had taken place. Soon after, the Messenger of Allah (saw) raided Ghatafan in Najd and they fled leaving behind their properties and women, which the Muslims took and returned to Madinah. Then he (saw) raided Dumat al-Jandal on the border between al-Sham and Hijaz. This was intended as a lesson and a warning to the other tribes who used to attack the caravans. But Dumat al-Jandal never confronted him

(saw), they just fled in terror leaving behind their properties which the Muslims also took returning to Madinah victorious.

These raids, and the measures taken by Allah's Messenger (saw) at home in Madinah, helped to re-establish Islam's authority and secured the grandeur of the Islamic State in the eyes of the Arabs and Jews. The effects of the defeat at Uhud were thus completely effaced.

## 21. The Battle Of Al-Ahزاب

The raids, taken together with the disciplinary action meted out by the Messenger of Allah (saw) in the wake of the battle of Uhud, had a great effect in restoring the high standing of the Muslims and in reasserting the authority of the Islamic State.

The Muslims' sphere of influence widened and their authority increased dramatically, reaching new heights. The whole of the Arabian Peninsula became fearful of the might exercised by the Muslims. Whenever the Arabs got wind of a raid that was about to be launched against them by Allah's Messenger (saw) they would get frightened and run away, this happened in Ghatafan and Dumat al-Jandal. Quraysh were no longer a match for the Muslims and they could no longer dare to confront them on their own. For example, in the last raid of Badr Quraysh backed down and did not even turn up. This helped the Muslims to enjoy some stability and gave them a little respite, allowing them to concentrate on life in Madinah. They were able to re-organise their way of life in the light of the recent changes that had taken place. Now that the Muhajireen had gained the booties of Banu Nadir such as their lands, palm trees (date palms), houses and furniture, which had been distributed among them, a considerable change in their fortunes had occurred. However, this did not distract them from pursuing their top priority, which was evidently jihad, for jihad has been decreed till the Day of Reckoning. Nevertheless, their living standards had become better and more stable than before.

Despite the serenity in Madinah, the Messenger of Allah (saw) always remained on the alert fearing the treachery of the enemy. He was forever keen to gather news about everyone and every development taking place in the Arabian Peninsula. He (saw) would send people on exploratory and news-gathering missions all over the land as well as further afield. He (saw) was anxious to learn everything about the movements of the Arabs in order to be ready to deal with any hostilities. This was especially so now that the enemies of the Muslims in the Peninsula numbered many, which was the outcome of building an army and a State to be reckoned with, and after expelling the Jews of Banu Qaynuqa' and Banu Nadir, as well as after having dealt the tribes such as Ghatafan, Hadhayl and others many a crushing blow.

In light of the above, the Messenger of Allah (saw) considered intelligence gathering to be vital. In fact it was through this medium that he received early warning of Quraysh combining together with several other tribes to raid Madinah. He (saw) was therefore able to make advanced preparations to meet the new threat.

It was the Jews of Banu Nadir who endeavoured to incite the Arabs against the Messenger of Allah (saw) in order to exact their revenge for being expelled from Madinah. A number of them had formed a party against the Messenger of Allah (saw), among whom were Huyayy ibn Akhtab, Sallam ibn Abi al-Huqayq and Kinanah ibn Abi al-Huqayq, and from Banu Wa'il were Haudhah ibn Qays and Abu 'Ammar, and it was this party which approached Quraysh in Makkah. Quraysh asked Huyayy about his people and he said, "I left them between Khaybar and Madinah hesitating and waiting for you to march with them against Muhammad and his companions." They also asked him about Banu Qurayzah and he said, "They remained in Madinah to deceive Muhammad. They are waiting for you to raid Madinah to help you from within." At that stage Quraysh were hesitant, not knowing whether to attack Madinah or not. They considered that there was no difference between them and Muhammad (saw) except his (saw) call to Allah and Islam. They therefore wondered whether Muhammad (saw) was in the right? To allay their doubts Quraysh asked the Jews, "You, O Jews, are the first scripture people and know the nature of our dispute with Muhammad. Is our deen the

best or is his?" The Jews replied, "Certainly your deen is better than his and you have a better claim to be in the right!"

The Jews were of the people who supposedly called to the tawheed and they knew very well that the deen of Muhammad (saw) was the right one, but their burning desire to incite the Arabs against him (saw) landed them in this despicable blunder. To declare that the worshipping of idols was better than the tawheed was their eternal disgrace and shame, but the Jews did it and they were to ably demonstrate that they could do even worse.

Once they were assured that Quraysh were convinced and that they would gladly respond to their call the Jews went to Ghatafan of Qays Ghaylan, to Banu Murrah and to Banu Fazarah, to Ashja'a, to Salim, to Banu Sa'd, to Asad and to anyone else who held a grudge against the Muslims. In time a number of Arab tribes were assembled and these went out with Quraysh heading for Madinah.

Quraysh marched under the leadership of Abu Sufyan. They numbered about 4,000 warriors, 300 cavalymen and another 1,500 warriors riding on camels. Banu Fazarah marched under the leadership of 'Uyayna ibn Hisn ibn Hudhayfah with a large number of warriors and 1,000 camels. Ashja'a marched under the leadership of Mis'ar ibn Rakhaylah, and Murrah marched under the leadership of al-Harith ibn 'Auf with 400 warriors. Salim and Bir Ma'una's people marched with about 700 warriors. When these had all gathered they were further reinforced by Banu Sa'd and Banu Asad. Altogether the army totalled about 10,000 men and the combined force marched under the leadership of Abu Sufyan. When news reached the Messenger of Allah (saw), he decided to entrench himself inside Madinah. Salman al-Farsi recommended digging a trench around Madinah and entrenching inside it, so the trench was dug and the Messenger of Allah (saw) worked at it himself encouraging the Muslims on with the hope of reward in Heaven. He (saw) prodded them to double and redouble their efforts and in this way the trench was completed in six days. In addition, the walls of the houses facing the enemy were fortified, the houses beyond (outside) the trench were then evacuated, and the women and children placed inside the fortified houses within Madinah. The Messenger of Allah (saw) set off with three thousand Muslims, he had his back to the valley of Sal' and the trench dividing him from the enemy. There he (saw) encamped, and a red tent was pitched for him.

Quraysh and their allies set off hoping to encounter Muhammad (saw) at Uhud but it was not to be. Then Quraysh marched on until they reached Madinah and to their surprise they found their way barred by the trench. Clearly Quraysh and her allies were not familiar with this kind of defensive strategy, they were forced to encamp outside Madinah beyond the trench to consider their next move. Abu Sufyan and those with him soon realised that they were in for a long stay by the trench because they were not able to storm it. This inconclusive situation proved troublesome as it was winter, the winds were fierce and biting cold. Under these conditions the people began to feel disheartened, they wished that they could return home. Huyayy ibn Akhtab was aware of this and so he suggested that Banu Qurayzah should be talked into violating the peace treaty, which they had signed with Muhammad (saw) and the Muslims, and join the clans. He told Quraysh and their allies that if Qurayzah did this the Muslims would lose all links with the outside world and the way would be open to invade Madinah. Quraysh and Ghatafan were pleased with the idea and sanctioned Huyayy to approach Ka'ab ibn Asad, the leader of Banu Qurayzah. When Ka'ab heard Huyayy coming he shut the door of the fort in his face. However Huyayy persisted until Ka'ab opened the door; he said to him, "Good heavens Ka'ab! I have brought you immortal fame and a great army. I have come with Quraysh with their leaders and chiefs, and Ghatafan with their leaders and chiefs. They have made a firm agreement and promised me that they will not

depart until we have made an end of Muhammad and his men." Ka'ab was hesitant and he recalled the Messenger of Allah's (saw) loyalty and faithfulness. He feared the consequences of what he was letting himself into. But Huyayy kept on wheedling Ka'ab, reminding him of how Muhammad (saw) had treated the Jews and how strong the Allies were, until at last Ka'ab gave way and accepted what Huyayy had asked of him. Thus Ka'ab broke his promise and cut loose from the bond that was between him and the Messenger of Allah (saw). Qurayzah therefore joined the Allies without the knowledge of Allah's Messenger (saw). The news reached the Messenger of Allah (saw) and his companions and this caused them a great deal of concern. They feared the worst, thus Allah's Messenger (saw) sent Sa'd ibn Mu'adh, chief of the Aus, and Sa'd ibn 'Ubadah, chief of al-Khazraj, together with 'Abdullah ibn Rawahah and Khawwat ibn Jubayr to go and see whether the report was true or not. He (saw) asked them to give him a sign which only he could understand so as not to undermine the peoples' morale and that if Qurayzah were still loyal to their agreement they were to speak out openly before the people. So they went forth and found the situation even more deplorable than they had at first heard. When they tried to persuade Qurayzah not to dishonour their agreement, Ka'ab demanded that they allow their brothers Banu Nadir to return back to their homes. Sa'd ibn Mu'adh, who happened to be an ally of Qurayzah, attempted to persuade them to stick to their agreement. They spoke disparagingly of the Messenger of Allah (saw) saying, "Who is the Messenger of Allah? We have no agreement or undertaking with Muhammad." The envoys returned and briefed Allah's Messenger (saw) of their findings. The situation was obviously extremely serious and fear was everywhere.

The Allies prepared to do battle. Qurayzah meanwhile asked the Allies to allow them ten days in order to prepare for battle while they, the Allies, would fight the Muslims fiercely during that time. They formed three divisions to fight the Messenger of Allah (saw), the division of Ibn al A'war al-Silmi closed in on Madinah from the valley, the division of 'Uyayna ibn Hisn moved in from the side, and Abu Sufyan came before the trench. Panic gripped the Muslims and they became terrified. The Allies' strength was apparent, and their morale very high, they went for the trench and a few of them managed to storm it. Some horsemen of Quraysh among whom were 'Amr ibn 'Abdu Wudd, 'Ikrimah ibn Abi Jahl and Dirar ibn al-Khattab made for a narrow part of the ditch and beat their horses so that they dashed through it and carried them into the swampy ground between the trench and Sal'. 'Ali ibn Abi Talib with some Muslims came out to hold the gap through which they had forced a passage. Now 'Amr ibn Abdu Wudd went forth when his contingent had come to a halt and challenged anyone to fight him. 'Ali accepted the challenge and said to him, "I call on you to dismount." 'Amr replied, "O son of my brother, I do not want to kill you." 'Ali said, "But I want to kill you." So they fought and 'Ali killed him. The remaining horsemen fled bursting headlong in flight across the trench. This upset, however, did not affect the Allies' morale it actually enraged them and made them all the more determined to terrorise the Muslims. In the meantime the zealots of Banu Qurayzah began to leave their forts and enter Madinah, this was with the aim of terrorising the nearby houses. Torment, anxiety and terror intensified within the Muslims' quarters, but the Messenger of Allah (saw) was always confident that Allah (swt) would grant him victory.

Relief came in the form of Nu'aym ibn Mas'ud. He had already embraced Islam though his own people did not know it and he came to the Messenger of Allah (saw). Nu'aym proposed to the Messenger of Allah (saw) a way in which he could awaken distrust amongst the disbelievers. So Nu'aym was instructed by the Messenger of Allah (saw) to go to Banu Qurayzah, with whom he had been a boon companion in jahiliyyah days, and remind them of his affection and the special ties that existed between them; remarking to him in a most famous statement, "For war is deceit." Nu'aym thus set about achieving this by speculating

what would be their fate should things go badly for them and Ghatafan together with Quraysh were to leave them to face Muhammad (saw) alone. He emphasised that Quraysh and Ghatafan might not bear waiting for a long time because they were not inhabitants of that land and hence had much less motivation to stay. He told them that if they were left to face Muhammad on their own they would not be able to do so. Finally, he suggested to them not to fight alongside the Allies until they had taken hostages from their chiefs who would remain in their hands as security. Only then should they fight Muhammad (saw) with their allies until they made an end of him. Qurayzah thought that this was excellent advice. Nu'aym then went to Quraysh and told them that the Jews of Qurayzah had regretted their action in opposing Muhammad (saw) and that they had sent him to tell them so. He stated that they were prepared to make it up with him by handing over some chiefs of the two tribes, Quraysh and Ghatafan, so that he could cut their heads off. He said to them, "So if the Jews send to you to demand hostages, do not send to them a single man." Then he went to Ghatafan and told them the same story that he had told Quraysh. The Arabs' suspicion of the Jews grew and Abu Sufyan sent for Ka'ab informing him that they had been besieging Muhammad (saw) for a long time and that they should make ready for battle the next day. Ka'ab replied that it was the Sabbath, a day on which they did nothing, no fighting and no work. Abu Sufyan was enraged and he came to believe what Nu'aym had told him. He sent an envoy back to Qurayzah to tell them to make another Sabbath instead of this one for it was essential to fight Muhammad the next day. The envoy also told them that if Quraysh and Ghatafan went out to fight and they were not there, their agreements would be canceled and they might be fought before Muhammad (saw). When Qurayzah heard Abu Sufyan's comments they asserted their stand that they would not violate the Sabbath, then they mentioned the hostages whom they should hold as security. When Abu Sufyan heard this he had no doubt left concerning what Nu'aym had told him. He began to think of a new strategy and he liaised with Ghatafan only to find out that they too had second thoughts about fighting Muhammad (saw). That night Allah (swt) sent a bitter wind and a thunderous storm which overthrew their tents and upset their cooking-pots. They were panic-stricken and thought that the Muslims would seize the chance to direct their onslaught against them, so Tulayha arose up and shouted, "Muhammad has come after you, so run for your lives". Abu Sufyan said, "O Quraysh! Be off, for I am going." So they grabbed hurriedly whatever they could carry and fled. Ghatafan and the rest of the Allies did the same. In the morning they were all gone.

When the Messenger of Allah (saw) saw this, he and the Muslims left the trench and returned to Madinah; Allah (swt) had spared the Muslims from fighting. Now that Allah's Messenger (saw) was rid of Quraysh he decided to finish with Banu Qurayzah once and for all. It was they who had broken their agreement and had conspired with the Allies to exterminate the Muslims, therefore Allah's Messenger (saw) ordered the muadhin (caller to the prayer) to deliver the adhaan saying that whoever was obedient should not perform the afternoon prayer until after he had reached Banu Qurayzah. Allah's Messenger (saw) sent 'Ali forward with his banner and the Muslims hastened to it full of joy and zest until they reached Banu Qurayzah whereupon they besieged them for twenty five nights. The Jews sent to the Messenger of Allah (saw) saying that they wanted to negotiate with him. After much negotiation they settled for the judgment of Sa'd ibn Mu'adh and he gave judgment that, "The men should be killed, the property divided and the women and children taken as sabi." The judgment was executed, the tribe was exterminated and Madinah was rid of them once and for all.

The defeat of the Allies marked the end of any serious attempt by Quraysh to confront the Messenger of Allah (saw) and the annihilation of Banu Qurayzah meant that all three Jewish tribes, which had originally lived around Madinah and who had agreements with Allah's

Messenger (saw) (which each broke in the course of time), had either been exterminated or expelled. This meant that the supremacy of Allah's Messenger (saw) and the Muslims over Madinah was absolute and as a result the Arabs were just as fearful of the Muslims as ever.

## 22. The Treaty Of Al-Hudaybiyah

Six years had elapsed since the emigration of Allah's Messenger (saw) from Makkah. By now he (saw) had become reassured about his army and the general state of the Islamic society in Madinah. The Islamic State had become a major force feared by all the Arabs. But in spite of this, the Messenger of Allah (saw) was continually thinking of new moves which enable him to strengthen the Islamic Message, which in turn would lead to the weakening of his enemies.

News had already reached Allah's Messenger (saw) that the peoples of Khaybar and Makkah were conspiring to raid the Muslims. So he (saw) designed a plan with the aim of appeasing the people of Makkah which would result in them leaving the way clear for the Messenger of Allah (saw) to pursue his da'wah within the Arabian Peninsula and as well to isolate the Jews of Khaybar from their allies, Quraysh. To achieve this the plan entailed a peaceful visit to the Sacred House of Allah. He (saw) knew that his plan would be easy to fulfill because the Arabs would not fight during the sacred months. He (saw) also knew that Quraysh was divided and had become fearful of the Muslims, therefore they would have to think twice before attempting any rash move against him. So he (saw) decided to go to the Sacred House as a pilgrim, if Quraysh were to prevent him then he would use this as a powerful propaganda tool against them and this would serve to further promote the Message of Islam in the eyes of the general public. With the above in mind, the Messenger of Allah (saw) announced that he was to go on the hajj in the sacred month of Dhul al-Qa'dah and he sent to the other Arab tribes enjoining them to take part in the pilgrimage to the Sacred House peacefully. The purpose of this last move was to signal to the Arabs that he (saw) was coming out as a pilgrim and not as a raider. He (saw) had asked the non-Muslim Arabs to join him although they were not of his deen simply because he wanted to emphasise that he did not want to fight.

The Messenger of Allah (saw) left Madinah with 1,400 men and seventy camels leading them on his she-camel, Quswa'. He (saw) made his ihram with the intention of clarifying to the people that he did not intend to fight and that he simply wished to visit the Sacred House of Allah. Six or seven miles after leaving Madinah Allah's Messenger (saw) and the Muslims reached a place called Dhil Halifah, there they donned the pilgrim garb. Then they marched towards Makkah. Quraysh heard that the Muslims had come for hajj and not to fight, but they feared that it was a ploy that Muhammad (saw) was using to enter Makkah. This possibility was never far from their minds and they decided to prevent Muhammad (saw) from entering the city. Quraysh, therefore, appointed Khalid ibn al-Walid and 'Ikrimah ibn Abi Jahl at the head of a great army that included a cavalry of two hundred. The army of the mushrikeen set off from Makkah towards the pilgrims in order to prevent them going there. They encamped at Dhi Tuwa to await the coming of the pilgrims. Information about the movements of Quraysh reached the Messenger of Allah (saw) and when he entered the village of 'Usfan he met a man from Banu Ka'ab and asked him about them; he replied, "There are Quraysh who have heard of your coming and have come out with their milch-camels and have put on leopard skins, and have encamped in Dhi Tuwa swearing that you will never enter Makkah in defiance of them. This man Khalid ibn al-Walid is with their cavalry which they have sent in advance to Kura' al-Ghamim." Kura' al-Ghamim was about eight miles from Usfan where the Muslims were encamped. When Allah's Messenger (saw) heard this he said, "Woe to Quraysh, war has devoured them! What harm would they have suffered if they had left me and the rest of the Arabs to go our own way? If they should kill me that is what they desire, and if Allah should give me victory over them they would enter Islam in flocks. If they do not do that, they will fight while they have the strength, so what are Quraysh thinking of? By

Allah, I will not cease to fight for the mission with which Allah has entrusted me until He make it victorious or I perish."

The Messenger of Allah (saw) reflected on the plan that he had designed and he thought hard about the situation. He had already decided on a peaceful strategy and had not prepared for battle, but Quraysh had sent an army to fight him though he did not want to fight. Would he go back, or change his plan and fight? He knew very well that the Muslims had enough Iman to face their enemy and engage in a battle with Quraysh if they were left with no choice but to fight.

However, Allah's Messenger (saw) had not come out for war and he had decided not to fight. He had instead come out to accomplish the hajj and had only peace in mind. He (saw) thought that if he was prevented from fulfilling the hajj ritual, which is expected, he wanted it to be peacefully; not aggressive prevention nor aggressive hajj. The peaceful plan which Allah's Messenger (saw) had masterminded was designed to create public opinion within Makkah and Quraysh about the glory and nobleness of the Message of Islam, and to contrast it with the misguidance, arrogance and aggression of Quraysh. This public opinion was crucial and it had to be built if the Islamic da'wah was to have the right grounds to prosper and spread. Public opinion was one of the most important contributory factors which would help to spread the da'wah and enable it to emerge victorious. Allah's Messenger (saw) was in danger of letting slip his chance to gain the public opinion on his side if he was to fight, therefore he decided not to change his original plan and to continue on in peace.

The Messenger of Allah (saw) thought long and hard about his next move. His shrewdness and statesmanship were far more better than any person, so he decided to go with his peace plan lest he misses the opportunity that presented itself and lest his plan backfires, under which circumstances Quraysh would be gifted with an excuse to launch a smear campaign amongst the Arabs against him, resulting in shifting the public opinion in their favour. Allah's Messenger (saw) then called on the Muslims, "Who will take us out by a way in which we shall not meet them?" A man volunteered to do so and he took them by a rugged rocky track between passes which was very hard on them until they managed to emerge from it into a valley below Makkah in a place called al-Hudaybiyah. There they camped. When the armies of Khalid and 'Ikrimah saw them they became scared and galloped back to defend Makkah. The Muslims daring move sent shivers down the disbelievers' spines. They could not believe that the Muslims had managed to out manoeuvre them and turn up at their doorstep unchecked. The disbelievers stationed themselves in Makkah while Allah's Messenger (saw) and his army stationed themselves in al-Hudaybiyah. The two camps faced each other and each thought about what action to take against the other. Some Muslims predicted that Quraysh would never allow them to perform the hajj and that they were preparing for war. They thought that there was no other way for them but to fight Quraysh, crush them and then perform it. In so doing they maintained that this would see off Quraysh once and for all.

Quraysh meanwhile flirted with the idea of fighting the Muslims till it throws them away, even if this meant perishing itself, but this idea soon evaporated for they knew that the Muslims were formidable opponents. Thus Quraysh opted to wait for the Muslims to make the first move.

In order to achieve what he had really come for, the Messenger of Allah (saw) stuck firmly to his original plan ever since his performing ihram in Madinah. He (saw) simply remained stationed in Hudaybiyah waiting to see what Quraysh would do next. He (saw) knew that Quraysh was scared of him and that they would soon send out envoys to negotiate with him

about his coming on hajj, so he (saw) patiently awaited their representatives. Quraysh first sent Budayl ibn Warqa' with some men of Khuza'ah to ask Allah's Messenger (saw) what he had come for, and after a short exchange of words they were convinced that the Muslims had not come out to fight but to visit the Sacred House and venerate the sacred precincts. The envoys returned to inform Quraysh and persuade them of this, but Quraysh accused them of being biased towards Muhammad (saw) and did not trust them. Quraysh sent out another delegation and it too returned shortly with the same findings. Then Quraysh sent to Allah's Messenger (saw) al-Hulays, chief of al-Ahbash (Abyssinians) to negotiate. Quraysh was counting on al-Hulays to stop Muhammad (saw), they actually meant to incite him against the Muslims. Quraysh hoped that once he had failed in his negotiations with Muhammad (saw) his hatred towards Muhammad (saw) would increase and he would become more determined to defend Makkah. However, when the Messenger of Allah (saw) heard that al-Hulays was coming he (saw) ordered the sacrificial animals to be let loose to meet him so as to demonstrate to him and make him realise that what the Muslims intended was hajj and not war.

Al-Hulays saw the animals going past him from the side of the valley and when he saw the Muslims looking like people about to perform 'umrah, since their camp site was engulfed in an atmosphere of worship, and that they did not appear to be equipped for fighting, he came to be greatly impressed by his observations. He was certain that these people really had come to worship and not to fight and so he went back to Quraysh even before meeting Allah's Messenger (saw) and he informed them of what he had seen. He demanded that Quraysh allow the Muslims to perform the hajj, and became furious threatening to withdraw his troops if Quraysh attempted to come between Muhammad (saw) and the Ka'bah. Quraysh, however, managed to calm him by changing their tune to a conciliatory one, and they asked him for extra time in the hope of obtaining more acceptable terms. He did so and Quraysh then sent 'Urwa ibn Mas'ud al-Thaqafi after reassuring Thaqafi that they trusted his judgment. He went to Allah's Messenger (saw) and tried in vain to convince him to go back. Eventually, he had to concede that the Messenger of Allah (saw) was in the right. So he returned to Quraysh and said to them, "O people of Quraysh! I have been to Chosroes in his kingdom, and Caesar in his kingdom and the Negus in his kingdom, but never have I seen a king among a people like Muhammad among his companions; whenever he performed his ablutions they performed ablutions the same way he did; if a hair of his head fell they ran to pick it up; they will never abandon him for any reason, so form your own opinion."

This only served to increase Quraysh's hostility and stubbornness and further negotiation and debate went on to no avail. The Messenger of Allah (saw) thought about sending a delegation himself, presuming that maybe Quraysh's envoys were too scared to approach him. He (saw) thought that his representative might be able to persuade them and so he sent to them an envoy, but they hamstrung the camel that he was riding on and tried to kill him. Fortunately, the al-Ahbash troops protected him. Quraysh's animosity grew by the day and they sent their louts out at night to throw stones at the Muslims' camp. This angered the Muslims and caused them in turn to want to fight Quraysh, but the Messenger of Allah (saw) managed to calm them down. Next, Quraysh sent fifty men with orders to surround the Messenger of Allah's camp and beat them, but they were caught and brought before the Messenger of Allah (saw) who forgave them and let them go their own way. This last development had a profound effect on the people of Makkah and it proved without a shadow of a doubt that Muhammad (saw) had been truthful all along. It demonstrated to them that he had genuinely come to perform the hajj and not to indulge in warfare. With this move he (saw) thus managed to motivate public opinion in Makkah in his favour. Now if he was to enter the city and Quraysh attempted to prevent him the people of Makkah and the Arabs would back him all the way

and support him against them. Quraysh therefore ceased their provocative activities and began to seriously contemplate peace. The Messenger of Allah (saw) decided to send another envoy to negotiate with Quraysh and he asked 'Umar ibn al-Khattab to go, but 'Umar told him, "O Messenger of Allah, I fear for my life with Quraysh, there is no more of Banu 'Adi ibn Ka'ab in Makkah to protect me and Quraysh know of my enmity and my rough treatment of them. However, I recommend a man more prized there than myself, 'Uthman ibn 'Affan." The Messenger of Allah (saw) then summoned 'Uthman and sent him to Abu Sufyan. So 'Uthman went off and conveyed the Messenger of Allah's (saw) message to them. They said to him, "If you want to go round the Sacred House, go round it." He said, "I cannot do so until the Messenger of Allah (saw) does so." 'Uthman then initiated peace negotiations with Quraysh, but they continued to reject the idea. The negotiations were extensive and proved difficult at times, however, Quraysh's position began to shift from a categorical refusal to an attempt to reach a compromise which would satisfy both parties. They searched together for a way out, they took to 'Uthman's style and felt at ease with him, and so it was that they ultimately endeavoured to work to secure an end to the crisis and thereby terminate their state of war with Muhammad (saw).

When 'Uthman extended his stay and was nowhere to be seen in Makkah, a rumour broke out in the Muslim camp that Quraysh had killed him. The Muslims were incensed by the news and they all reached for their swords ready to do battle with Quraysh. At this point, the Messenger of Allah (saw) found it necessary to review his whole plan now that Quraysh had apparently betrayed 'Uthman in the sacred month, despite being an envoy. Because of this, he (saw) said, "We shall not leave until we fight the enemy." He (saw) summoned his Sahabah and stood under a tree where he sought an undertaking (pledge), and it was there that they all pledged to him that they would fight unto the death. Once the pledge had been given, Allah's Messenger (saw) clapped his hand against the other as a pledge on behalf of 'Uthman, as if he had been with them. The pledge became known as bay'ah al-ridwan on which Allah (swt) said,

"Allah's good pleasure was on the believers when they swore allegiance to you under the tree: He knew what was in their hearts, and He sent down tranquillity upon them, and He rewarded them with a speedy victory." [TMQ 48:18]

Once the bay'ah had been given, and whilst the Muslims were preparing for battle, news reached the camp that 'Uthman had not been killed. Soon after 'Uthman returned and briefed the Messenger of Allah (saw) about what Quraysh had said. Peaceful negotiations then resumed between Allah's Messenger (saw) and Quraysh. Quraysh then sent Suhayl ibn 'Amr to negotiate with the Messenger of Allah (saw) over the issue of the armistice to be signed between the two camps, and as well over the broader issues concerning the performance of the hajj and 'umrah. In the case of the latter the condition was that the Messenger of Allah (saw) should only be allowed back the following year. The Messenger of Allah (saw) agreed to conduct peace negotiations on these terms because they secured for him what he had really come for in the first place, it would not matter therefore whether he visited the Sacred House this year or the next. What he (saw) truly wanted was to isolate Khaybar from Quraysh and to remove all the obstacles that stood between him and the Arabs which hindered his da'wah and conveyance of the Message of Islam. That is why he wanted to sign a treaty with Quraysh and hold a truce which would put a halt to their war; as for the hajj and the 'umrah, he could always perform that next year.

Allah's Messenger (saw) entered into long and delicate negotiations with Suhayl ibn 'Amr about the truce and its conditions. The negotiations proved to be hard at times and were threatened with collapse had it not been for the shrewdness of the Messenger of Allah (saw).

The Muslims followed the developments closely and thought that the negotiations were about the 'umrah, whereas the Messenger of Allah (saw) was all along aiming at securing a truce. The Muslims were therefore irritated, but Allah's Messenger (saw) thought this to be a blessing, for he conducted the negotiation the way he wanted, regardless of the details and short term benefits. A deal was struck between the two sides once certain specific conditions had been laid down. These conditions triggered the anger of the Muslims and they tried to persuade the Messenger of Allah (saw) to reject them and resort instead to war. 'Umar jumped up and went to Abu Bakr saying, "Why should we agree to what is demeaning to our deen?" 'Umar tried to force Abu Bakr to go with him to persuade the Messenger of Allah (saw) not to accept the terms. Abu Bakr, however, tried to dissuade him from pursuing such an initiative, but to no avail. 'Umar ended up going to Allah's Messenger (saw) on his own. He spoke to him (saw) and expressed his anger and exasperation. However, that did not diminish Allah's Messenger's determination and perseverance, he told 'Umar, "I am Allah's servant and His Messenger, I shall not go against His commandment and He will not make me the loser."

In drawing up the treaty, the Messenger of Allah (saw) summoned 'Ali ibn Abi Talib and told him to write, "In the name of Allah, ar-Rahman ar-Raheem." Suhayl said, "Hold it! I do not recognise ar-Rahman ar-Raheem, but write 'In your name, O my Lord'." The Messenger of Allah (saw) told 'Ali to write the latter and he did so. Then he (saw) said, "Write 'This is what Muhammad the Messenger of Allah has agreed with Suhayl ibn 'Amr'." Suhayl said, "Hold it! If I witnessed that you were Allah's Messenger I would not have fought you. Write your own name and the name of you father." The Messenger of Allah (saw) said, "Write 'This is what Muhammad ibn 'Abdullah has agreed with Suhayl ibn 'Amr'." After these opening lines the treaty between the two sides was written comprising the following clauses:

1. To lay aside from war and refrain from hostilities during the period of the truce.
2. If anyone from Quraysh embraced Islam and came to Muhammad (saw) without the permission of his guardian, he would return him to them, and if anyone from those with Muhammad came to Quraysh they need not return him to Muhammad.
3. Whosoever wished from amongst the Arabs to enter into an alliance with Muhammad could do so, and he who wished to enter into an alliance with Quraysh could do so.
4. The Muslims and Muhammad's companions had to retire from Makkah that year to return the following year when they would be free to enter Makkah and stay there three nights. They would be allowed to carry swords in their sheaths and nothing more.
5. The treaty was for a limited period of time, ten years from the date of its conclusion.

The Messenger of Allah (saw) and Suhayl signed the treaty amidst the agitation and anger of the Muslim army. Suhayl returned to Makkah leaving the Messenger of Allah (saw) disturbed and exasperated by the reaction of the Muslims. He (saw) felt awkward (and depressed) about the stand of the Muslims, their eagerness and zeal to fight, and he went to his wife Umm Salma who was accompanying him and confessed to her his anguish. She said to him, "O Messenger of Allah, verily the Muslims will not disobey you, they only are zealous about their deen and their Iman in Allah and your Message, do shave your head and slaughter your animals and you will find that the Muslims will follow suit, then march with them back to Madinah." The Messenger of Allah (saw) came out and shaved his head, marking the 'umrah after which he felt calm and satisfied. When the Muslims saw him in that state they leapt up slaughtered the animals and shaved their heads. Then Allah's Messenger (saw) returned with the Muslims to Madinah. When they were half way back the surah al-Fath came down.

Allah's Messenger (saw) recited it all and it was then that everyone realised that the treaty of Hdaybiyah was indeed a clear victory for the Muslims.

As soon as the Muslims had arrived in Madinah the Messenger of Allah (saw) began drawing up plans to exterminate the existence of Khaybar and to spread the Message of Islam beyond the Arabian Peninsula whilst strengthening Islam within it. He (saw) wanted to take advantage of his truce with Quraysh to concentrate on abolishing a few pockets of resistance and to establish foreign ties. The treaty enabled him (saw) to achieve this. The Messenger of Allah (saw) managed to carry out the plan that he had so shrewdly pieced together under the pretext of performing the hajj. Despite all the various difficulties and obstacles, he (saw) managed to achieve all the political goals he had wanted to achieve. Therefore, without a shadow of a doubt the treaty of Hdaybiyah was a great victory. Some of its achievements were:

1. The Messenger of Allah (saw) managed to create public opinion for the Message of Islam among the Arabs in general and among Quraysh in particular. This enhanced the respect of the Muslims and diminished that of Quraysh.
2. The belief and trust of the Muslims in Allah's Messenger (saw) was demonstrated. It proved that the Iman of the Muslims was unshakable, their courage and readiness to sacrifice themselves were second to none.
3. The Muslims learnt that political manoeuvres were an effective means to promote the Islamic da'wah.
4. The Muslims who remained in Makkah among the disbelievers formed a pocket within the enemy's stronghold.
5. The Hdaybiyah treaty demonstrated that the method in politics is derived from the same thought (source), truthfulness and faithfulness, however, the means have to be coupled with shrewdness, this can be achieved by concealing the means and the real aims from the enemy.

### **23. The Raid On Khaybar**

The Messenger of Allah (saw) remained in Madinah for fifteen nights after returning from al-Hudaybiyah, then he ordered the Muslims to prepare for a raid on Khaybar provided that only those who had been with him at al-Hudaybiyah took part.

Before marching to al-Hudaybiyah, news was received that the Jews of Khaybar were conspiring with Quraysh to raid Madinah in an effort to exterminate the Muslims. This conspiracy was supposed to be a secret. Aware of this Allah's Messenger (saw) opted for a peace plan with Quraysh in order to secure a truce with them so that he could concentrate his efforts towards annihilating the Jews. As soon as he (saw) had concluded his peace treaty, isolating in the process Khaybar from Quraysh, he turned to Khaybar and ordered the Muslims to prepare the army just days after his return from al-Hudaybiyah. The Messenger of Allah (saw) marched at the head of 1,600 Muslims accompanied by 100 riders and all were assured of Allah's support. They reached Khaybar after a march of three days with the people of Khaybar suspecting nothing, although the Muslims spent the night just outside their forts. In the morning, the workers of Khaybar came out with their spades and baskets and when they saw the army of the Muslims they turned tail and fled crying, "Muhammad with his force." The Messenger of Allah (saw) said, "Allah Akbar! Khaybar is destroyed. When we arrive at a people's area it is a bad morning for those who have been warned."

The Jews were expecting Allah's Messenger (saw) to attack them, for when they heard about the treaty of Hudaybiyah they considered it to be a climb down by their allies Quraysh. In response to the new dangerous situation some of them suggested forming an alliance with the Jews of Wadi al-Qura and Tayma' in order to raid Madinah. They would then be without the need to rely on the pockets of Arab tribes, especially now that Quraysh had signed a treaty with the Messenger of Allah (saw). Others actually flirted with the idea of entering into a pact with the Messenger of Allah (saw) in the hope that this would efface the Muslims' hatred towards them. They used to remind each other of this ever since they felt the danger nearing. They were aware that the Messenger of Allah (saw) had divulged their conspiracy with Quraysh and that he (saw) was about to raid them, but they were caught by surprise before they could enact their plans and instead had to call on Ghatafan to help them. They attempted to fortify their positions and resist the onslaught, but the Muslim army was swift in its assault and their defensive lines crumbled. Eventually, they became desperate and sought peace with the Messenger of Allah (saw) provided he spared their lives. The Messenger of Allah (saw) agreed and he allowed them to remain in their homes. Since their land and their vineyards became his under the law of conquest, he allowed them to work and live there provided they gave him half of their crops and fruits annually. They agreed to his (saw) terms. Allah's Messenger (saw) then returned to Madinah and stayed there until he left for the 'umrah of qada'.

By his abolishing of the political authority of Khaybar and by making them submit to the authority of the Muslims, the Messenger of Allah (saw) neutralised the northern danger on the way to al-Sham, as he had done likewise in the south after the Hudaybiyah treaty. This action actually paved the way for the Message of Islam to be spread inside the Arabian Peninsula as well as outside it.

## 24. Envoys To The Neighbouring Countries

Once the Messenger of Allah (saw) had found his mind at ease about the status of the Message within the whole of Hijaz, he initiated his da'wah of relentlessly spreading Islam outside Hijaz, for Islam is a universal deen and he (saw) was sent to the whole of mankind. Allah (swt) says in surah al-Anbiya',

"And We have not sent you except as a mercy to mankind." [TMQ 21:107]

Allah (swt) also says in surah Saba',

"And We have not sent you except as a bringer of good tidings and a warner unto all mankind." [TMQ 34:28]

Allah (swt) says in surah al-Taubah,

"It is He Who has sent His Messenger with Guidance and the deen of Truth to prevail over all the deens even though the pagans may detest (dislike)." [TMQ 9:33]

The Messenger of Allah (saw) initiated contact abroad once he had secured and strengthened the State and the Islamic da'wah at home. He (saw) began by sending envoys abroad. He (saw) considered foreign policy to be concerned with any part of the Peninsula which was not under his rule. Once the whole of Hijaz had fallen under his (saw)'s rule, foreign policy came to be defined as the dealings with any country outside Hijaz such as the Persian and Roman empires. Now that he (saw) had signed the treaty of Hudaibiyah and the authority of Khaybar had been smashed, almost the whole of Hijaz came under his rule, for Quraysh no longer had the force to stand in his way. The Messenger of Allah (saw) therefore sent his envoys abroad. However, he (saw) did not do so until he had made sure that his authority at home was impregnable and strong enough to support his foreign policy.

The Messenger of Allah (saw) told his companions one day after returning from Khaybar, "O people! Verily Allah has sent me as a mercy to all mankind, so do not differ about me like the Hawaryyun differed about Issa son of Maryam." The Companions asked, "And how did the Hawaryyun differ O Messenger of Allah?" He (saw) said, "He invited them to what I invited you, as for the one who was sent to a near place he accepted, while the one who was sent to a far place he disliked and slowed down."

And he (saw) mentioned to them that he would send envoys to Heraclius, Chosroes, al-Muqawqis, al-Harith al-Ghassani the king of al-Hirah, al-Harith al-Himyari the King of Yemen and to al-Nagashi (Negus) the king of Abyssinia, inviting them to Islam. The companions of Allah's Messenger (saw) responded positively and they fashioned a silver ring for him with the words Muhammad the Messenger of Allah engraved on it. He (saw) then sent his envoys with the Messages he had written inviting these kings to Islam. His message to Heraclius was assigned to Dahiah ibn Khaleefah al-Kalbi, the one to Chosroes was assigned to 'Abdullah ibn Hudhayfah al-Sahmi, that of Negus to 'Umar ibn Umayyah al-Damri, that of Muqawqis to Hatib ibn Abi Balta'a, that of the king of 'Oman to 'Amr Ibn al-'As al-Sahmi, that of the king of al-Yamamah to Sulait ibn 'Amr, that of the king of Bahrain to al-'Ala' ibn al-Hadhrami, that of al-Harith al-Ghassani, king of Tukhum al-Sham to Shuja' ibn Wahab al-Asadi, and the message to al-Harith al-Himyari king of Yemen was assigned to al-Muhajir ibn Umayyah al-Makhzumy. The envoys all set off simultaneously, each one to where Allah's Messenger (saw) had sent them. They delivered their messages and most of those leaders whom Allah's Messenger (saw) had addressed replied somewhat favourably, some though replied negatively and rudely. As for the Arab rulers, the kings of Yemen and 'Oman replied rudely; the king of Bahrain responded positively and embraced Islam; the king

of Yamamah replied that he was ready to embrace Islam if he were to be appointed ruler, so Allah's Messenger (saw) cursed him for that. As for the non-Arab rulers, Chosroes, the Persian monarch, was enraged and tore up the message when it was read to him. He wrote to Badhan, his governor in Yemen, asking him for the head of that man in Hijaz. When Allah's Messenger (saw) heard this he said, "May Allah tear up his kingdom." However, when the message of Chosroes reached his governor Badhan in Yemen he inquired about Islam and soon declared his acceptance of it. He remained Allah's Messenger's governor over Yemen, although he was not actually al-Harith al-Himyari King of Yemen. As for al-Muqawqis, the Leader of the Copts, he answered favourably and sent a present to the Messenger of Allah (saw). Negus also answered favourably, and it was said that he embraced Islam. As for Heraclius, he did not actually pay any attention to the message, neither did he contemplate sending an army nor did he say anything. When al-Harith al-Ghassani sought permission to head an army to punish this preacher (Muhammad (saw)), he did not reply to him, but summoned him to al-Quds (Jerusalem).

As a result of these messages, the Arabs began entering the deen of Allah in crowds, their congregations hurried to the Messenger of Allah (saw) proclaiming their Islam. For the non-Arabs, Allah's Messenger (saw) prepared a task force and declared jihad against them.

## 25. The Battle Of Mu'tah

As soon as the envoys sent to the kings had returned, the Messenger of Allah (saw) prepared the army and declared Jihad outside the Arabian Peninsula. He (saw) began monitoring the news about the Romans and the Persians, and since he had frontiers with the Romans he was constantly gathering intelligence about them. He (saw) anticipated that the Message of Islam was about to spread rapidly once it had reached beyond the Arabian Peninsula. Therefore, he was sure that al-Sham (greater Syria) would be the breakthrough. Ever since Badhan, the governor of Chosroes in Yemen, had embraced Islam, he (saw) was assured against any imminent danger emanating from there and began to think about sending troops to al-Sham to fight the Romans. So in the month of Jumada al-Ula, in the 7th year of the Hijrah, i.e. just a few months after the treaty of Hudaibiyah, he (saw) gathered an elite force of three thousand warriors and appointed Zayd ibn Harithah as their commander. He (saw) said to them, "If Zayd gets hurt, Ja'far should take charge and if Ja'far gets hurt, 'Abdullah ibn Ruwahah should take charge."

The army set off, and Khalid ibn al-Walid (who had embraced Islam after the treaty of Hudaibiyah) was among them. The Messenger of Allah (saw) marched with them to the outskirts of Madinah, he instructed them not to harm any women or children or to cut any trees. Then he (saw) and the rest of the Muslims prayed for them saying, "May Allah be with you, protect you and return you to us safe and well."

The army marched on and its leaders drew up their war plan, deciding that it should be a quick and lightning assault. They decided to take the people of al-Sham by surprise, just as Allah's Messenger (saw) always did in his raids. The army commanders agreed on this plan and set off to accomplish it. However, when they reached Mu'an they learnt that Sharhabeel al-Ghassani, Heraclius' governor of al-Sham had gathered an army of 100,000 fighters to confront them. The news came as a shock to them and they encamped at Mu'an for two nights thinking what to do now that they were faced with such a formidable army. The most favoured option was for them to write to the Messenger of Allah (saw) informing him about the enemy's numbers, if he sent reinforcements well and good, otherwise they would await his orders. 'Abdullah ibn Ruwahah encouraged the men saying, "O men! By Allah what you dislike is that which you have come out for; viz. martyrdom. We are not fighting the enemy with numbers or strength or multitude, but we are fighting them with this deen with which Allah (swt) has honoured us. So come on! Both prospects are fine; victory or martyrdom." The men were roused by these words and their Iman strengthened. They therefore went forward until they reached the village of Masharif. When the enemy approached the Muslims withdrew to a village called Mu'tah. There the battle between them and the Romans began. It was one of the fiercest battles ever, death and blood baths loomed. The battle was between three thousand Muslims who had come out in search of martyrdom, and two hundred thousand disbelievers (an extra 100,000 men were sent to reinforce the Roman army) gathered to destroy the Muslim force. The fighting was fierce and Zayd ibn Harithah fought holding the Messenger of Allah's banner, he went forward unabated deep into the heart of the enemy's forces, not fearing for one moment the consequences. He fought bravely knowing that it was martyrdom in the way of Allah, his courage was phenomenal, his heroism unmatched, until he died of the wounds caused by the enemy's spears that ripped his body. Then Ja'far ibn Abi Talib took over the banner; he was a handsome young man 33 years of age. He too fought hard, defying death until the enemy surrounded his roan (horse), so he jumped off and hamstringed her and went forward into the heart of the enemy striking them with his sword until a Roman struck him and cut him in half, killing him. 'Abdullah ibn

Ruwahah took the banner and advanced with it riding his horse. He had to put pressure on himself as he felt reluctant to go forward. He then proceeded and fought until he too was killed. Then Thabit ibn Arqam took over the banner and said, "O Muslims! Do rally around one man." So they rallied to Khalid ibn al-Walid. He took the banner and gathered the Muslims around him and organised them trying all the while to keep the enemy at bay. He managed to restrict the fighting to a few skirmishes until night had fallen. During the night, Khalid ibn al-Walid drew up a shrewd withdrawal plan having realised the magnitude of the enemy's army compared to the meagre numbers of his. And following his carefully drawn up plan, Khalid ordered a section of the army to create some uproar and noise at the rear to deceive the enemy into believing that reinforcement had arrived. When they did so, the enemy became frightened and refrained from attacking the Muslims, they were even elated when Khalid did not attack them. Then Khalid withdrew and took his troops back to Madinah, not victorious, nor defeated, but having achieved quite a considerable feat.

The leaders of this battle and its warriors had known all along that death was beckoning to them, yet they fought heroically and were killed. Islam commands the Muslim to fight in the way of Allah, kill and be killed, and it is this type of fighting that is regarded as the soundest investment, for it is jihad in the way of Allah. He (swt) says in surah al-Taubah,

"Allah has purchased of the Believers their persons and their goods; for theirs (in return) is the Garden (of Paradise): They fight in His cause, and slay and are slain: A promise binding on Him in Truth, through the Torah, the Gospel, and the Qur'an: And who is more faithful to His covenant than Allah? " [TMQ 9:111]

That is the reason why those heroes fought despite the certain death that faced them. The Muslim fights if there is no other way left but to fight and regardless of whether death is certain or not. In jihad, matters are not measured by the number of the enemy and its weaponry, nor by its multitude, but by the result it achieves no matter how high the sacrifice is, regardless of the outcome. The Muslims' war with the Romans in Mu'tah was absolutely crucial, the leaders had no choice but to engage the enemy in battle, despite the fact that death was beckoning. Thus it is that the Muslim should never fear death, nor should he consider anything else but to fight in the way of Allah (swt). The Messenger of Allah (saw) had known all along that sending his troops to the Roman state to fight them along their frontiers was dangerous, but it was necessary to scare the life out of them and to demonstrate how the believers fight and how their courage and their belief were unmatched despite their paltry number. The risk was worth taking for it paved the way for further jihad by the Muslims in order to spread Islam and implement it in the lands that they would conquer. The risk and the adventure was successful for it turned out to be an introduction to the battle of Tabuk and it landed a heavy blow against the Romans who shivered at the prospect of facing the Muslims again. Al-Sham was conquered in this way.

## 26. The Conquest Of Makkah

As soon as the treaty of Hudaibiyah was signed between the Messenger of Allah (saw) and Quraysh, the tribe of Khuza'ah came under the protection of Allah's Messenger (saw) and Banu Bakr sided with Quraysh. Relations between Quraysh and the Messenger of Allah (saw) remained peaceful and both sides resumed their business: Quraysh expanding their trade in order to make up for what they had lost during the wars against the Muslims; Allah's Messenger (saw) pursuing his task of conveying the Message of Islam to the whole of mankind whilst simultaneously strengthening the foundation of the Islamic State in the Arabian Peninsula and providing safety and security within the State itself. The Messenger of Allah (saw) next destroyed the Jewish fortifications at Khaybar and then he sent his envoys to the kings of various states and established foreign contact. He (saw) expanded the authority of the Islamic State to the point where it engulfed the whole of the Arabian Peninsula. Then exactly one year after al-Hudaibiyah the Messenger of Allah (saw) called on the people to prepare for the qada' 'umrah having been excluded from performing it the previous year. A convoy of two thousand men marched from Madinah and, in accordance with the Hudaibiyah agreement, none of the men carried more than the single sword in its sheath as prescribed by it. However, the Messenger of Allah (saw) feared betrayal by Quraysh and he prepared an army of a hundred riders appointing Muhammad ibn Maslamah at its head, with instructions to lead the convoy, but not to trespass the sanctity of Makkah, which they duly obeyed. The Muslims went on to perform the fulfilled Umrah and they returned to Madinah without incident. After their return to Madinah the people of Makkah began embracing Islam. Khalid ibn al-Walid, 'Amr ibn al-'As and the guardian of the Ka'bah, 'Uthman ibn Talhah embraced Islam, followed by a large number of people from Makkah. Muslims grew stronger by the day, whereas fear and weakness crept into Quraysh's ranks.

When the Muslims returned from the battle of Mu'tah, having suffered a large number of casualties, Quraysh thought that the Muslims were finished, so they motivated the tribe of Banu Bakr against Khuza'ah and supplied them with weapons. Banu Bakr attacked Khuza'ah killing some of their men and the remaining Khuza'ah fled to Makkah taking refuge there. 'Amru ibn Salim al-Khuza'i then hurried to Madinah and told the Messenger of Allah (saw) what had happened and implored his help. The Messenger of Allah (saw) replied, "May you be helped, O 'Amru ibn Salim." Upon this the Messenger of Allah (saw) decided that this breach of the treaty by Quraysh could not be ignored nor could it be corrected except by the conquest of Makkah. Quraysh became afraid of the consequences of breaking the treaty, so they sent Abu Sufyan to Madinah with the aim of strengthening the treaty by asking for an extension. However, Abu Sufyan did not go directly to meet Allah's Messenger (saw) instead he went to the home of his daughter Umm Habibah, wife of the Messenger of Allah (saw). As he moved to sit on the Messenger of Allah's bed she folded it up so that he could not sit on it. When her father asked her whether she had folded it because he was too good for it or whether it was too good for him, she replied, "It is the Messenger of Allah's bed and you are a filthy polytheist so I do not want you to sit on it." Abu Sufyan retorted, "By Allah since you left me you have turned bad." He then left in a rage. Later Abu Sufyan managed to talk to the Messenger of Allah (saw) and to ask for the extension to the treaty which he so badly desired, but he did not receive any reply as he was ignored completely. Next he went to Abu Bakr and pleaded with him to speak to the Messenger of Allah (saw) on his behalf. Abu Bakr refused to do so. Then he approached 'Umar ibn al-Khattab who rebuked him harshly saying, "Should I intercede for you with the Messenger of Allah? By Allah if I had only an ant I would fight you with it." Finally he went to see 'Ali ibn Abi Talib who was with Fatima and he appealed to him to intercede with the Messenger of Allah (saw). 'Ali answered that if the Messenger of

Allah (saw) had determined a thing then it was useless for anyone to try to talk him out of it. Turning to Fatima he asked her to let her son Hassan be a protector between men. She said, "None could give protection against the Messenger of Allah." At this point Abu Sufyan became desperate and he rode off shortly back to Makkah where he told his people about his experience in Madinah. Meanwhile the Messenger of Allah (saw) urged his people to prepare for battle and he marched with them towards Makkah. He (saw) was hoping to take Quraysh by surprise in order to force them to surrender and thus avoid bloodshed.

The Muslim army which set off from Madinah to conquer Makkah numbered ten thousand. They eventually reached Marr al-Zahran, which was about five kilometres from Makkah, without the knowledge of Quraysh. Although Quraysh expected an invasion the leaders were still debating how they should counter it. During this time the ever vigilant Abu Sufyan came out to assess the danger that was looming over Makkah when he was met by al-'Abbas, who had by then accepted Islam. He was riding the Messenger of Allah's white mule on an errand to warn Quraysh to seek protection or face annihilation from the Muslims, since Quraysh were not in a position to stand in the Messenger of Allah's way. Al-'Abbas said to Abu Sufyan, "This is the Messenger of Allah and his army and I fear for you and Quraysh if he should enter Makkah by force." Abu Sufyan asked, "What is there to do?" al-'Abbas asked him to ride behind him and together they would go to meet the Messenger of Allah (saw) and seek his protection. As they proceeded through the Muslim encampment they passed by 'Umar's fire, 'Umar recognised the Messenger of Allah's mule and also spotted his implacable enemy Abu Sufyan. Realising that al-'Abbas wanted to seek protection for Abu Sufyan, 'Umar dashed to the tent where the Messenger of Allah (saw) was in order to ask him to cut off Abu Sufyan's head. However, al-'Abbas galloped his mule there ahead of 'Umar exclaiming as he entered, "O Messenger of Allah, I have promised him my protection." A big row ensued between 'Umar and al-'Abbas, whereupon the Messenger of Allah (saw) said to al-'Abbas, "Take him away to your quarters and bring him back in the morning." The next day Abu Sufyan was brought to the Messenger of Allah (saw) whereupon he embraced Islam. Al-'Abbas said to the Messenger of Allah (saw), "O Messenger of Allah! Abu Sufyan is a man who likes to have some cause for pride, could you not do something for him?" Upon hearing this Allah's Messenger (saw) proclaimed that, "He who enters Abu Sufyan's house is safe, and he who locks his door is safe, and he who enters the Masjid is safe." Allah's Messenger (saw) then ordered that Abu Sufyan be detained in the narrow part of the valley where the mountain projected so that the whole Muslim army would pass by him and he would see them. Afterwards, he hurried back to his people shouting at the top of his voice, "This is Muhammad who has come to you with a force you cannot resist. He who enters Abu Sufyan's house is safe, and he who locks his door is safe, and he who enters the Masjid is safe." On hearing this Quraysh aborted their resistance. Then the Messenger of Allah (saw) marched and entered Makkah, while remaining on the alert. He (saw) had instructed his commanders to split into four divisions and fight only those who resisted them, and not to fight or shed any blood unless they were forced to do so. The army entered Makkah meeting no resistance except the division of Khalid ibn al-Walid, who quickly dealt with it.

The Messenger of Allah (saw) dismounted at the top of Makkah where he stopped for awhile before marching towards the Ka'bah, which he circumambulated seven times. This done he summoned 'Uthman ibn Talhah and he opened the Ka'bah. People gathered around him, and he (saw) addressed them by reciting the verse,

"O Men, We created you from male and female and made you into peoples and tribes that you may know one another: of a truth the most noble of you in Allah's sight is the most pious. (With all things) Allah has full knowledge and is well acquainted." [TMQ 49:13]

Then the Messenger of Allah (saw) asked, "O Quraysh, what do you think I am about to do with you ?" They replied, "Good! You are a noble brother, son of a noble brother." He (saw) said, "Go your own way for you are the freed ones."

Inside the Ka'bah the Messenger of Allah (saw) ordered the pictures of angels and prophets which were decorating its walls to be torn down. He (saw) also found a dove made out of wood which he broke in his hands and then threw away. Lastly, Allah's Messenger (saw) pointed to the multitude of idols present with a stick in his hand and he recited the verse,

"The truth has come and the falsehood has passed away; verily falsehood is sure to pass away."  
" [TMQ 17:81]

All the idols collapsed onto their backs one after the other, then they were burnt, broken up and disposed of. Now the sacred house was finally purified.

The Messenger of Allah (saw) remained in Makkah for fifteen days during which time he organised its affairs and taught the people Islam.

Thus Makkah was completely conquered and as a result the main obstacle standing in the way of the Islamic campaign had finally been overcome. The great victory was achieved with only a few pockets of resistance, such as Hunayn and the city of Ta'if, remaining in the Arabian Peninsula. These were not expected to prove difficult to remove.

## 27. The Battle Of Hunayn

When the tribe of Hawazin heard how the Muslims had conquered Makkah, they feared that they might be raided and their quarters stormed by the Muslims. They therefore set about countering the Muslim threat by preparing themselves for battle. Malik ibn 'Auf al-Nadri assembled Hawazin and Thaqif together and marched with them until they reached the valley of Autas. The news of the impending armies of Hawazin and Thaqif reached the Muslims fifteen days after the conquest of Makkah and they prepared themselves to meet them. Malik did not encamp in the valley of Autas, instead he moved his troops up into the hills of Hunayn in the most inaccessible part of the valley, where he organised them carefully in strategic positions. He instructed his men to attack the Muslims once they had entered the valley so as to cause confusion among them which would lead to them breaking ranks. The plan was carefully worked out whilst he waited there for the arrival of the Muslims.

After a few days the Muslims appeared. The Messenger of Allah (saw) had marched with 2,000 Makkans and another 10,000 men from the army which had conquered Makkah. This formidable force marched towards the battlefield and reached Hunayn in the evening, where they rested until just before dawn. Then they moved on into the valley during the twilight. The Messenger of Allah (saw) was riding his white mule at the rear of the army as they entered the valley when the enemy squadrons attacked as one man, following the orders of their leader. They showered the Muslims with spears, and amidst the darkness the Muslims were stunned by the sudden surprise attack. As the spears hit them from every direction the Muslims broke and fled in terror, none heeding the other. They passed by the Messenger of Allah (saw) without stopping and continued running en masse. Only al-'Abbas and the Messenger of Allah (saw) were left on the battlefield, as for the rest of the army, they were as good as defeated and fleeing for their lives. The Messenger of Allah (saw) stood where he was, surrounded by a small group of the Ansar, Muhajireen and his family, and he called to the people, "Where are you going O people?" But the people were unable to hear his call, they just continued running without turning back fearing death all the while. Hawazin and Thaqif chased them and killed them wherever they reached them.

At that moment the Messenger of Allah (saw) experienced one of the most critical situations in his life. His reaction to the hopeless turn of events was outstanding. With his army in full flight, his companions as well as the new Muslims having deserted him, there stood he steadfast calling them all back to him. Some of those who had only recently embraced Islam openly disclosed their enmity and hatred on that day. They expressed their malicious joy at the defeat of the Muslims. Kalda ibn Hanbal said, "Surely sorcery is vain today." Sheebah ibn 'Uthman ibn Talhah said, "Today I will get my revenge on Muhammad." Abu Sufyan said, "Their flight will not stop before they get to the sea." The prospect of utter defeat prompted those who had embraced Islam during the conquest of Makkah and who had come out supposedly to fight alongside the Messenger of Allah (saw) to divulge their true nature and intentions. The companions had also fled from the battlefield and therefore the situation that the Messenger of Allah (saw) faced was very dark indeed. Instead of retreating, however, in view of the overwhelming odds, the Messenger of Allah (saw) remained on the battlefield where he proceeded to move forward towards the enemy riding his white mule. His uncle al-'Abbas ibn 'Abd al-Muttalib remained with him as did Abu Sufyan Ibn al-Harith ibn 'Abd al-Muttalib (not to be confused with Abu Sufyan ibn Harb Abu Mu'awiyah), who was holding the nose band of his mount preventing it from moving any further under the dangerous conditions. Al-'Abbas cried out loudly, "O Ansar who hosted and protected, O Muhajir in who gave your pledge of the tree! Muhammad is verily alive so come on." Al-'Abbas

repeated his cry which echoed around the valley. The defeated Muslims heard him and they remembered the Messenger of Allah (saw) and their duty of jihad. They realised just what their defeat would entail and just what the consequences would be if they were to be defeated and crushed by the polytheists. They understood that it could mean the end of the deen which they had vowed to protect with their lives. They responded to the call and began to gather around the Messenger of Allah (saw). They rejoined the battle fighting with great zeal and courage until their numbers began to swell and the battle became fiercer. As this was happening the Messenger of Allah (saw) became more and more reassured until he took up a handful of pebbles and threw them towards the enemy saying, "Today the faces have turned ugly." Then the Muslims launched a counter offensive against Hawaazin and Thaqif without any fear for their lives. The heavy fighting soon forced the polytheists to realise that they were in danger of being exterminated and they had no choice but to run for their lives. They fled leaving behind them their property and women which the Muslims took as booty. The Muslims continued to give chase, imprisoning many polytheists on the way. They pursued them even further up the valley and killed of them many more; their leader Malik ibn 'Auf fled the field running to Ta'if where he sought protection. Allah (swt) helped the Muslims gain a great victory that day, and the following verses were revealed in conjunction with the events,

"Assuredly Allah did help you in many battlefields and on the day of Hunayn: Behold! Your great numbers elated you, but they availed you naught: The land for all that it is wide, did constrain you, and you turned back in retreat. But Allah did pour his Calm on the Believers, and sent down forces which you saw not: He punished the disbelievers: thus does He reward those without faith. Again will Allah, after this, turn (in mercy) to whom He will: for Allah is oft-forgiving, Most Merciful." [TMQ 9:25-27]

The booty that passed into the hands of the Muslims after defeating the enemy proved to be enormous. They counted what amounted to 20,000 camels, 40,000 sheep and 4,000 silver shields. Many disbelievers were killed, a huge number, amounting to 6,000, were imprisoned and taken to Wadi al-Ji'ranah. As for the Muslim martyrs they were not counted, however, they numbered many; some of the books of seerah narrate that two Muslim tribes were exterminated.

The Messenger of Allah (saw) left the spoils and the prisoners in al-Ji'ranah and besieged Ta'if where Malik ibn 'Auf had gained sanctuary after his defeat. Ta'if belonged to the tribe of Thaqif, it was built like a fortress and its people were expert in the art of siege warfare. They were also extremely wealthy and had plenty of provisions. Thaqif were expert at throwing spears and they showered a group of Muslims, as they attempted to advance on the city, killing them. It proved very difficult for the Muslims to storm the fort and they instead camped out of arrow shot waiting to see what the Messenger of Allah (saw) would do. The Messenger of Allah (saw) sought the help of Banu Daus to bombard Ta'if with the catapult and they arrived four days after the siege had begun with their instruments. Now the Muslims attacked with the catapult and they sent out tanks to creep forward and make contact with the city walls in an attempt to burn down Ta'if. As they approached, however, they were showered with hot pieces of metal which burnt the tanks forcing the Muslim operators inside to flee. Thaqif seized the opportunity to shower the retreating Muslims with spears, killing many of them. The Muslims failed to storm Ta'if directly so they resorted to cutting down and burning the vineyards in an attempt to force Thaqif to surrender. This Thaqif did not do and time finally ran out for the Muslim besiegers.

The sacred months began and it was the first of Dhul al-Qa'dah when the Messenger of Allah (saw) together with the Muslims withdrew from Ta'if heading for Makkah. They stopped in

al-Ji'ranah where their spoils and prisoners had been left. Amongst many other settlements concluded at this time the Messenger of Allah (saw) promised to return to Malik ibn 'Auf his family and his assets if he would embrace Islam. When Malik ibn 'Auf heard this news he promptly appeared before the Messenger of Allah (saw) and declared his Islam to him. Incredibly the Messenger of Allah (saw) after having just fought for his life against Malik gave him what he had promised together with an additional one hundred camels. Eventually, the people feared that their share of the spoils would diminish if Allah's Messenger (saw) continued to give out the spoils to whoever came to him from Hawazin. They asked that the spoils be divided so that each could get his share. They murmured amongst themselves about these concessions and their murmuring's reached the ears of the Messenger of Allah (saw). He (saw) publicly removed a hair from the hump of a nearby camel and holding it aloft in his fingers said, "O People! By Allah I have nothing but a fifth of your booty even to this hair, and the fifth I will return to you; so whoever took anything in dishonesty, even a needle, it will be a shame and a flame and an utter ignominy on him and his family on the Day of Resurrection." The Messenger of Allah (saw) took the fifth share for himself and split the rest among his companions. From his share he gave to those whose hearts were to be won over; those in the past who had been his arch enemies. He (saw) gave Abu Sufyan, his son Mu'awiyah, al-Harith ibn al-Harith, al-Harith ibn al-Hisham, Suhayl ibn 'Amr, Huwaytib ibn 'Abd al-'Uzza and the leaders of the tribes one hundred camels each on top of their share of the booty. He (saw) gave others, in addition to their share, fifty camels each.

In distributing the booty, the Messenger of Allah (saw) showed a great deal of generosity and forgiveness. He (saw) also exhibited supreme shrewdness and political awareness. However, some of the Muslims did not realise the motives behind these manoeuvres. The Ansar, who had been given nothing from the spoils, began to whisper among themselves about these actions of the Messenger of Allah (saw). Unfortunately, they took the matter to heart. One of them summed up the collective feelings of the others with the words, "By Allah, the Messenger of Allah has met his own people." Sa'd ibn 'Ubadah went to the Messenger of Allah (saw) and told him what had happened. He (saw) asked, "Where do you stand in this matter Sa'd?" In reply Sa'd said, "I stand with my people." Allah's Messenger (saw) said to him, "Then gather your people to this enclosure." When all concerned were assembled the Messenger of Allah addressed them so, "What is this I hear of you? Do you think ill of me in your hearts? Did I not come to you when you were erring and Allah guided you? Poor and Allah made you rich? Enemies and Allah softened your hearts?" They answered, "Yes indeed, Allah and His Messenger are most kind and generous." He (saw) continued, "Why don't you answer me O people of Ansar?" They said, "How shall we answer you O Messenger of Allah? Kindness and generosity belong to Allah and His Messenger." He (saw) said, "Had you by Allah so wished you could have said - and you would have spoken the truth and have been believed - you came to us discredited and we believed you; deserted and we helped you; a fugitive and we took you in; poor and we comforted you. Are you disturbed in mind because of the good things of this life by which I win over a people that they may become Muslims while I entrust you to your Islam? Are you not satisfied that men should take away flocks and herds while you take back with you the Messenger of Allah? By him in whose hand is the soul of Muhammad, but for the migration, I should be one of the Ansar myself. If all men went one way and the Ansar another I should take the way of the Ansar, O Allah, send Your mercy on the Ansar, their sons and their sons' sons." The people wept until the tears ran down their beards and they said, "We are satisfied with the Messenger of Allah as our lot and portion."

The Messenger of Allah (saw) returned to Makkah from al-Ji'ranah in order to perform the 'Umrah together with the army. Afterwards he (saw) appointed 'Utab ibn Usayd as wali

(governor) of Makkah and assigned the task of teaching the people Islam to Mu'adh ibn Jabal. The Messenger of Allah (saw) returned to Madinah with the Ansar and the Muhajireen.

## 28. The Raid On Tabuk

News reached the Messenger of Allah (saw) that the Romans were preparing to raid the North of the Arabian Peninsula in order to wipe out the memory of the spectacular tactical withdrawal which the Muslim army had staged in the battle of Mu'tah. This time he (saw) decided to face the foreign threat himself, so he (saw) drew up a plan designed to finally kill off any ambitions that the Roman leaders held about interfering in the affairs of the Muslims or any thoughts that they may have entertained about raiding their lands.

It was the end of the summer, the heat was intense and there was a drought on. The distance between Madinah and al-Sham was long and hard and it was not the season for travelling, because of this the journey there would require endurance, the Messenger of Allah (saw), taking these factors into account, uncharacteristically disclosed the destination to his men in order for them to make adequate preparations. In his other military encounters the Messenger of Allah (saw) always kept his aims a secret, misleading the enemy by adopting a strategy of deceptive manoeuvres. However, on this occasion, in view of the extenuating circumstances, the Messenger of Allah (saw) declared his intention to fight the Romans alongside their borders from the first day. He (saw) sent for all the tribes asking them to prepare for war so that as many mujahideen as possible could be gathered. He (saw) ordered the wealthy Muslims to spend from what Allah (swt) had generously provided them with in order to arm, if possible, the Muslim army to the teeth. The Messenger of Allah (saw) also began inciting and exhorting people to join in the jihad. In reply the Muslim response varied. Those who had embraced Islam with their hearts full of guidance and light hurried to the call of Allah's Messenger (saw) with great zeal and courage. Some of them were poor, not even possessing a mule to ride on, and others were rich, they brought all their possessions and handed them to the Messenger of Allah (saw); it was these who volunteered whole-heartedly to fight in the way of Allah (swt), longing all the while for martyrdom. But those who had embraced Islam for no other reason than out of fear or personal gain - fear of the Muslims or anticipation of gaining a share of the booty - those were lukewarm in their response and they were the ones who began finding excuses. They whispered among themselves about the raid that was to take place in this far off country in the burning heat. Those were the hypocrites. They said to each other, "Do not fight in this heat." Allah (swt) revealed the following concerning their predicament,

"And they said, Go not forth in the heat. Say: The fire of hell is fiercer in heat. If only they could understand." [TMQ 9:81]

The Messenger of Allah (saw) said to Jadd ibn Qays, "Would you like to fight the Banu Asfar, Jadd?" Jadd replied, "Will you allow me to stay behind and not tempt me, for everyone knows that I am strongly addicted to women and I am afraid that if I see the Roman women I shall not be able to control myself?" On hearing this the Messenger of Allah (saw) turned away from him. It was about him that Allah (swt) revealed the following verse,

"There are some who say give me leave and do not tempt me. Surely they have fallen into temptation already and hell encompasses the disbelievers." [TMQ 9:49]

The hypocrites did not stop there, they began inciting people not to join in the jihad and so the Messenger of Allah (saw) decided to deal with them harshly and teach them a lesson. When news reached him that some of the hypocrites were meeting in the house of Suwaylim the Jew, where they were plotting and introducing doubt into the peoples' minds by urging them to stay behind and not fight, he (saw) sent to them Talhah ibn 'Ubaydullah with a group of his companions and they burnt the house down. Everyone fled the scene and one of the

hypocrites broke his leg while escaping from the building. This served as a warning to others and none of the hypocrites dared to repeat such open sedition again.

The firmness and forcefulness with which the Messenger of Allah (saw) went about preparing the army produced a huge effect on the public and a very large number of troops were gathered. In all about thirty thousand people answered the call to jihad. The army was named the army of 'al-'Usrah' (crisis or hardship) because it was asked to face a formidable Byzantine force in the summer heat far away from Madinah. The army also required massive financing. The assembled army was led in prayer by Abu Bakr whilst the Messenger of Allah (saw) sorted out his unfinished business in Madinah and issued his instructions during his absence. These were that Muhammad ibn Maslamah would be in charge of Madinah and 'Ali would remain behind to look after the wives of Allah's Messenger. The Messenger of Allah (saw) then rejoined the army and took command. Thereupon the order went out to move forward and they proceeded to advance en masse in a spectacular display of strength and might which was witnessed by the people remaining in Madinah. Women climbed onto the rooftops to see off this massive force of mujahideen.

The army moved relentlessly towards al-Sham, not entertaining any second thoughts, unperturbed by the heat, thirst or famine. Some of those who lagged behind were moved by this display of strength and courage and so they soon joined the force and marched towards Tabuk where the Roman armies were encamped ready to raid the Muslims. When, however, the Romans heard about the size and strength of the Muslim army the nightmare of Mu'tah flashed before their eyes. They recalled the bravery and resolve of the Muslims and they remembered their inferior weapons and lack of numbers. The fact that this time the Messenger of Allah (saw) was at the head of the Muslim army sent shivers down their spines, they were simply terrified and this led to them rushing back into the interior of al-Sham and the safety of their fortresses. After their withdrawal from Tabuk the Roman positions on the border of al-Sham became deserted. When the Messenger of Allah (saw) heard this he moved unmolested into Tabuk, occupied it without a fight and encamped there. He (saw) chose not to chase the Romans, but contented himself with the occupation of Tabuk and control of the nearby border regions. The Muslim force remained in Tabuk for about a month dealing with those remaining forces who wished to fight or resist them. He (saw) sent messages to the leaders and governors who were under Roman control in the area. He (saw) wrote to Yuhanna ibn Ru'mah governor of Aylah, the people al-Jarba' and of Adhrah telling them to submit or face invasion and they yielded to him and obeyed. They made peace with the Messenger of Allah (saw) and paid the jizyah. Having completely fulfilled his objective the Messenger of Allah (saw) then returned to Madinah.

In his absence, the hypocrites took advantage of the situation to spread rumours and cause division among the believers. They strengthened their seditious operations within the society by building a masjid in Thu Awan, a town about an hour daylight journey from Madinah. The masjid was used to shelter the hypocrites who tried to distort the words of Allah and who attempted to cause division in society by spreading poisonous tales. The owners of the masjid had approached the Messenger of Allah (saw) as he was preparing for the expedition to Tabuk asking him to come and pray there. He (saw) asked them to wait until he returned from his trip. On returning the Messenger of Allah (saw) heard of their mischievous deeds and the truth about the masjid was revealed to him. The masjid was ordered to be destroyed and it was duly burnt down. Thus the hypocrites were dealt with very harshly indeed. In light of their experience they became terrified and never again thought to indulge in such ventures.

The raid on Tabuk marked the completion of the Muslims' authority over the whole of the Arabian Peninsula. The word of Allah spread all over the land and Allah's Messenger (saw)

secured his dominance and established his authority without anyone remaining to challenge him. After this time the congregations of Arab tribes came to him in crowds pledging their obedience and declaring their Islam.

## 29. The Dominance Of The Islamic State Over The Arabian Peninsula

The raid on Tabuk enabled the Messenger of Allah (saw) to secure the frontiers of the State and to frighten off his enemies. It also set the example for all his successors to emulate in order to carry the Message of Islam to the outside world.

As soon as Allah's Messenger (saw) returned from the raid on Tabuk the whole of the south of the Peninsula from Yemen, Hadramut and 'Oman came and declared their Islam to him. They submitted to the rule and authority of the Islamic State.

In the ninth year of Hijrah the congregations hurried to the Messenger of Allah (saw) to declare their Islam and that of their people. This marked the total dominance of the Islamic State over the Arabian Peninsula. The only remaining threat to this authority was an internal one in the shape of the polytheists who had been allowed to continue worshipping their idols and performing the pilgrimage to the Sacred House of Allah due to the agreement that the Messenger of Allah (saw) had made with them. The agreement stated that the people were not to be forbidden from visiting the Sacred House, nor were they to be harmed during the sacred months. However, this state of affairs could not be allowed to last, for how could it be that the Sacred House would be able to play host to people of contradictory beliefs, one despising and abhorring the other? How would it be possible for two conflicting beliefs to come together around the House of Allah when one of those beliefs had led to the destruction of the others' idols? More seriously still, could the adherents of the opposing faith be left to their own devices whilst the rest of society had submitted to the authority of the Islamic State and the unity of Allah (swt)? Clearly polytheism had become an anachronism and a danger to the unity of society and thus it had to be eradicated. Concerning the polytheists Allah (swt) revealed the surah of al-Taubah to the Messenger of Allah (saw) after the raid on Tabuk and once the hajj led by Abu Bakr was underway. The Messenger of Allah (saw) summoned 'Ali ibn Abi Talib and asked him to join Abu Bakr in Makkah where he was instructed to address the people with the new revelation. 'Ali went there and met with the people. Then he, with Abu Hurayrah next to him, arose and recited from the Qur'an,

"A (declaration) of immunity from Allah and His Apostle, to those of the pagans with whom you have contracted mutual alliances" [TMQ 9:1]

until he reached the point where Allah (swt) says,

"And fight the pagans all together as they fight you all together, but know that Allah is with those who restrain themselves." [TMQ 9:36]

When 'Ali finished reciting these verses he paused for awhile and then shouted, "O people, verily no disbeliever will enter paradise, no polytheist will go on pilgrimage after this year and nobody should circumambulate the House naked. Afterwards there will be no covenant except for those who had an agreement with the Messenger of Allah (saw) for a period, he can have it for that period." 'Ali shouted these four orders and then he gave the people four months in which to return to their homes. Never again after that year did any polytheist go on the pilgrimage nor did anyone ever circumambulate the Sacred House naked.

The Word of Allah had now engulfed the whole of the Arabian Peninsula through the agency of the newly established Islamic State which was, and remained, based on the Islamic 'aqedah as revealed by the Creator, Allah (swt). With the revelation of surah Bara'ah, the last surah, the abolition of polytheism in the Arabian Peninsula and the founding and establishment of the Islamic State was complete, all thoughts contradictory to Islam were

eradicated, and all authorities other than the Islamic State were wiped away. The grounds for carrying the Message of Islam to the rest of mankind were thus firmly laid.

### 30. The Structure Of The Islamic State

The Messenger of Allah (saw) ruled over both Muslims and non-Muslims and he managed their affairs from the first day he set foot in Madinah. Once the Islamic State was founded he (saw) set about forming an Islamic society in which the welfare of the people was properly catered for. Acting in his capacity as a statesman he (saw) signed treaties with the Jews, with Banu Dhamrah and Banu Madlaj; then later treaties were signed with Quraysh and with the people of Ayla, al-Jarba' and Uzrah. As well, he (saw) gave people the oath that no one would be prevented from performing the pilgrimage to the House nor should any fear in the sacred month. As commander of the armed forces the Messenger of Allah (saw) planned and executed many military campaigns. He (saw) sent Hamzah ibn 'Abd al-Muttalib, Muhammad ibn 'Ubaydah ibn al-Harith and Sa'd ibn Abi Waqqas in raids against Quraysh. He (saw) invested Zayd ibn Harithah, Ja'far ibn Abi Talib and 'Abdullah ibn Rawahah with the authority to fight the Romans, as he did likewise with Khalid ibn al-Walid when he (saw) sent him to lead the fight against Dumat al-Jandal. He (saw) did not shy away and led the army himself in numerous actions where fierce battles were fought.

The Messenger of Allah (saw) looked after the affairs of the people in his role as politician and chief administrator of the Islamic State by appointing a wali (governor) in every sector and an 'amil in every town so as to help solve their problems and ensure the smooth running of the society in accordance with the revelation which he received. For example, he (saw) appointed 'Utab ibn Usayd as wali over Makkah shortly after its conquest and once Badhan ibn Sasan embraced Islam he was appointed wali of Yemen. Mu'adh ibn Jabal al-Khazraji was appointed as wali over al-Janad and Khalid ibn Sa'id ibn al-'As was appointed 'amil over San'a. Allah's Messenger (saw) also appointed Zayd ibn Lubayd ibn Tha'labah al-Ansari as wali of Hadramut, Abu Musa al-Ash'ari as wali of Zabeed and Aden, and 'Amr ibn al-'As as wali of 'Oman. At home Abu Dujanah was appointed the 'amil of Madinah. The Messenger of Allah (saw) would select those who were best suited for the job at hand; those who could fill the hearts of those they governed with Iman. He (saw) would ask them about the methods they would employ when they governed. It has been narrated that Allah's Messenger (saw) asked Mu'adh ibn Jabal al-Khazraji before sending him to Yemen, "What would you rule by?" In reply he said, "By the book of Allah." He (saw) said, "What if you did not find the verdict in there?" He said, "I would rule by the Sunnah of Allah's Messenger." Then he (saw) said, "And what if you did not find the verdict in there?" Mu'adh answered, "I would exert my own ijthihad." Upon this the Messenger of Allah (saw) said, "Praise be to Allah for guiding the Messenger of Allah's Messenger to what Allah and His Messenger love." It was also reported that when Allah's Messenger (saw) appointed Abban ibn Sa'id as wali of Bahrain he said, "Be nice to the people of 'Abd Qays and be generous to them."

The Messenger of Allah (saw) would appoint most exemplary Muslims as governors whom he would command to teach the deen to those who accepted Islam and to receive from them the sadaqah. In most instances he (saw) would assign the task of collecting the funds to the wali as well as ordering them to bring to the people the glad tidings of the arrival of Islam, culturing them the Qur'an and make them understand the deen. He (saw) would instruct the wali to be gentle and lenient in the face of truthfulness and harsh in dealing with rebellion and injustice, and to prohibit people from referring to the tribes and clans if there were agitations amongst them, so that their reference was to Allah (swt) alone without any other associate. The Messenger of Allah (saw) would instruct his governors to take the fifth of the booty, to collect what had been prescribed on the Muslims as sadaqah and to tell the Jews and Christians, who had embraced Islam willingly, that they had become believers enjoying the

same rights and obliged to fulfill the same duties as any other Muslim. The wali was instructed to prevent any persecution of Christians and Jews whatsoever. The Messenger of Allah (saw) told Mu'adh before sending him to Yemen, "You will go to people who are people of the book. Let your first task be to invite them to worship Allah; if they believed in Allah, inform them that He has imposed on them zakat, taken from the wealthy among them and given to the needy. If they obeyed, do take it from them and look after their money; and fear Allah with the plea of the oppressed for there is no screen between it and Allah."

The Messenger of Allah (saw) used to send 'Abdullah ibn Ruwahah to the Jews of Khaybar to assess their crops and fruits and collect their dues. They complained to the Messenger of Allah (saw) about his harsh assessments and they once tried to bribe him by offering some of their ornaments to him; they said, "Take this and go easy with your assessment." 'Abdullah replied, "O Jewish people! You are to me the most despised creatures of Allah, however, this does not make me treat you unjustly. What you offered me as bribery is forbidden and we do not take it." They commented, "By this, the Heavens and the Earth were created."

The Messenger of Allah (saw) would check on the governors and administrators and monitor their work. He (saw) would listen to reports about them. He removed al-'Ala' ibn al-Hadrami, the 'amil of Bahrain, because a delegation of 'Abd Qays complained about him. He (saw) would check the administrators' collections and assess their revenues and expenditures. In one instance he (saw) appointed one man to collect the zakat; when the man returned he said, "This is for you and this has been given to me as a present." Upon hearing this, Allah's Messenger (saw) said, "What is it with the man? We appoint him to work on what Allah has entrusted in us, and he says this is for you and this is a present given to me? Won't he stay in his parents home and see if he gets any presents? If we appoint someone to do a job and pay him for it, anything he takes besides that would be ill gained."

The Messenger of Allah (saw) appointed judges to settle people's disputes. He (saw) appointed 'Ali as judge over Yemen and 'Abdullah ibn Nawfal as judge over Madinah. He (saw) also appointed Mu'adh ibn Jabal and Abu Musa al-Ash'ari as judges in Yemen as well. He (saw) inquired from them, "What would you judge by?" They replied, "If we do not find the judgment in the Book nor in the Sunnah we shall use analogy and exact a judgment." He (saw) approved of that method. The Messenger of Allah (saw) did not content himself solely with appointing judges, he (saw) also established complaints tribunals (madhalim) to deal with complaints concerning judges and walis alike. He (saw) appointed Rashid ibn 'Abdullah as amir of the judiciary and the complaints tribunals, with powers to supervise the cases brought before such tribunals.

The Messenger of Allah (saw) managed all aspects of people's affairs. He appointed registrars, they were like the heads of departments of State; 'Ali ibn Abi Talib was the writer of treaties, al-Harith ibn 'Auf was in charge of the Messenger of Allah's official stamp, Mu'ayqeeb ibn Abi Fatimah was secretary of the booties, Hudhayfah ibn al-Yaman was in charge of assessing the crops and fruits throughout Hijaz, Zubayr ibn al-'Awwam was secretary of sadaqah, al-Mughira ibn Shu'bah was given the task of writing all the loan agreements and transactions, and Sharkhabeel ibn Hasanah was employed as the writer of messages which were sent to various kings. He (saw) would appoint for every department a secretary or director regardless of the number of departments. In this matters he (saw) consulted his companions extensively, especially those who showed a large degree of understanding and deep thinking and who possessed great devotion to Islam. There were seven such companions from the Ansar and seven from the emigrants; some of these were Hamzah, Abu Bakr, Ja'far, 'Umar, 'Ali, ibn Mas'ud, Salman, 'Ammar, Hudhayfah, Abu Dharr, al-Muqdad and Bilal. He (saw) also consulted others as well, but the above mentioned

companions were those whom he consulted most. In all they were like a council of shura (consultation).

The Messenger of Allah (saw) imposed on the Muslims and non-Muslims alike some levies on the two types of land, the fruits and the livestock. These levies were the zakat, the 'ushr (tithe), the fay'i (war booty), the kharaj (land tax) and the jizyah (tribute). The anfal and the booties belonged to the State treasury. The zakat was distributed among the eight categories of people entitled to it, as mentioned in the Qur'an, and nobody else; the zakat fund was never siphoned off to pay for government expenditures, those were covered by the fay'i, kharaj, jizyah and the war booties. These were sufficient to cover the State's expenditure and finance the war effort. The State was never short of money.

This is how the Messenger of Allah (saw) founded the system and structure of the Islamic State. He set up everything himself and completed in during his (saw) lifetime. He (saw) was the head of State, he had assistants, governors, judges, an army, secretaries and a council of shura. This type of structure must be followed and adopted when implementing any Islamic State. Information concerning all these details of the structure of the Islamic State has been transmitted from generation to generation via tawatur (collective testimony). The Messenger of Allah (saw) held the post of head of State from the very first day he arrived in Madinah, until his death (saw). Abu Bakr and 'Umar were his two assistants. The Sahabah agreed after his (saw) death on the obligation of appointing a Khaleefah to follow him as the head of State only, not in the Message, nor as a Prophet, for he (saw) was verily the seal of Prophets.

Therefore, he (saw) established a complete system of government during his lifetime. He (saw) left behind him the type of rule and the governmental structure known and evident to everyone.

### **31. The Jewish Attitude Towards The Islamic State**

The Jews did not amount to much prior to the arrival of the Messenger of Allah (saw), what presented the major challenge to his authority were the Arabs in general and Quraysh in particular. Therefore, he (saw) signed treaties with the Jews which stipulated that they would submit to his authority and that they would not enter into an alliance with any of his enemies. However, as the Jews watched the Islamic State grow stronger by the day and the authority of the Muslims expand, they began attacking the Muslims with arguments and slanders. They became further alarmed after the sweeping victory of the Muslims over Quraysh in the battle of Badr, thus they increased their libelling of the Muslims and began plotting against the Messenger of Allah (saw). News reached the Messenger of Allah (saw) and the Muslims about the mischief that the Jews were up to, this led to animosity and hatred between the Muslims and the Jews and subsequently both camps began to lie in wait for each other. The arrogance of the Jews continued to increase; Abu 'Afak, one of Banu 'Umar ibn 'Auf, would recite poems insulting Muhammad (saw) and the Muslims; 'Asma' bintu Marwan would criticise Islam and libel Allah's Messenger (saw); Ka'ab ibn al-Ashraf would intercept Muslim women and use abusive language on them, he would also travel to Makkah to recite libellous poems and incite the people there against the Messenger of Allah (saw). The Muslims could bear it no longer and they killed them in the hope that this would deter the Jews. However, despite their cowardice and fear they intensified their campaign of hatred and abuse. The Messenger of Allah (saw) warned them of the consequences if they did not refrain from insulting and harming the Muslims, but the Jews did not take his warning seriously and they arrogantly repulsed him with the following rebuke, "O Muhammad! You seem to think that we are your people. Do not deceive yourself because you encountered a people with no knowledge of war and got the better of them; for by Allah if we fight you, you will find that we are real men."

At that point the Messenger of Allah (saw) was left with no recourse but to fight the Jews of Madinah. The Muslims went to Banu Qaynuqa' and besieged them in their quarters for fifteen days, not allowing anyone in or out, preventing anyone from taking them any food. The Jews were forced to capitulate and accept submission to the authority and rule of Muhammad (saw). He (saw) allowed them in his mercy to evacuate Madinah with their possessions. This they did and they went out of the city until they reached Wadi al-Qura where they remained for awhile. Then they traveled further north until they reached Adhra'at on the frontiers of al-Sham. With their expulsion, the backbone of the Jews was broken and those who remained submitted to the Muslims for fear of reprisal. When, however, they had regained their strength they resorted to their habits of old; their hatred flared up once again after the defeat of the Muslims in the battle of Uhud. They began plotting against the Messenger of Allah (saw) and they eventually conspired to kill him. The Messenger of Allah (saw) sensed their true intentions so he decided to lead them on in order to divulge their scheme. One day he (saw) together with ten of his companions, among whom were Abu Bakr, 'Umar and 'Ali, went to Banu Nadir on business. The Jews pronounced their insincere joy and goodwill towards Allah's Messenger (saw), however, he soon felt that they were plotting something. One of the Jews was seen going to one side, another was spotted entering the house by which wall the Messenger of Allah (saw) was sitting. Fearing their treachery he (saw) arose from his position and left at once, pausing only to ask his companions to wait until he returned. The Jews did not know what to do and they became confused as they tried to harmonise themselves in order to exchange niceties with the Muslims. The companions waited for a while, then they decided to follow Allah's Messenger (saw). They were told that he had been seen entering the Masjid in Madinah and so they went to him there and he (saw) informed

them of the treachery of the Jews, sending Muhammad ibn Maslamah back to Banu Nadir with orders for them to leave the country. Banu Nadir were given ten days to comply with these instructions, then he (saw) besieged them until they too gave up hope and departed with all their possessions except their weapons. Some of them stopped at Khaybar and others went on until they reached Adhra'at in al-Sham.

Madinah was therefore purified from the Jewish mischief and only one major Jewish tribe, Banu Qurayzah, remained there. Since these did not violate their treaty Allah's Messenger (saw) did not interfere with them.

This state of affairs persisted only temporarily. Because Banu Qurayzah had witnessed what had happened to Banu Qaynuqa' and Banu Nadir, and, fearing the might of the Muslims, they maintained a low profile. However, they too soon changed their spots when they listened to Huyayy ibn Akhtab and were persuaded to side with the Ahzab (allies) who had come to exterminate the Muslims during the battle of the trench. They violated their treaty when they prepared to join in the extermination of the Muslims. Once again they showed the worst malice and treachery for a covenant. As soon as the Messenger of Allah (saw) had rid himself of the threat of the Allies, he turned on Banu Qurayzah and besieged them for twenty-five nights. The Jews would not leave their forts and they became sore pressed; Allah (swt) cast terror into their hearts. Eventually they sent to the Messenger of Allah (saw) saying, "Send us Abu Lubabah that we may consult him." Abu Lubabah was from the tribe of Aus, their previous allies. When they saw him they arose to meet him; the women and children came to him weeping in his face and he felt sorry for them. They said, "O Abu Lubabah, do you think that we should submit to Muhammad's judgment?" He replied, "Yes," and pointed with his hand to his throat, signifying slaughter. Then he left them. Ka'ab ibn Asad made a few suggestions which they refused and he said to them, "You have no other choice but to submit to Muhammad's judgment." The Jews sent word to the Messenger of Allah (saw) that they wished to be allowed to leave for Adhra'at without their possessions. He (saw) refused insisting that they submit to the judgment. In the light of this they asked their former allies the Aus to intercede on their behalf. The Aus came to the Messenger of Allah (saw) and he said to them, "Will you be satisfied, O Aus, if one of your own number pronounces judgment on them?" They replied, "Yes." Whereupon he (saw) said, "Tell them to choose whoever they wish." The Jews chose Sa'd ibn Mu'adh. Sa'd took an oath from both parties that they would accept his judgment. Having done so, Sa'd ordered Banu Qurayzah to come out and lay down their weapons, which they did. Then he pronounced the judgment that the men should be killed, their property divided and their women and children taken as captives. When the Messenger of Allah (saw) heard this he exclaimed, "By Him in Whose hand is the soul of Muhammad, Allah has approved of your judgment and I shall execute it." Then the Messenger of Allah (saw) went to the market in Madinah and ordered trenches to be dug there. The Jews were sent for in batches, their necks were struck and their bodies buried there. He (saw) divided the possessions of the Jews, their women and their children among the Muslims, and took a fifth for himself. He (saw) saved some of the booty and gave it to Sa'd ibn Zayd al-Ansari to go to Najd and buy horses and weapons to strengthen the Muslim army and increase its arsenal.

Thus Banu Qurayzah were exterminated, however, other Jewish tribes were still lurking nearby. The most strong of these were those of Khaybar and they declined to enter into a treaty with the Messenger of Allah (saw). The Jews of Khaybar had conspired with Quraysh against the Muslims before the treaty of al-Hudaybiyah and their presence remained a constant threat to the Islamic State. As soon as the Messenger of Allah (saw) had concluded the treaty of al-Hudaybiyah he ordered his army to prepare for the conquest of Khaybar. The

Muslims set off with 1,700 mujahideen, 100 of whom were mounted, confident of Allah's victory. They went to Khaybar and stood outside the fortresses ready to storm them. Inside the Jews conferred amongst themselves, Salam ibn Mashkam suggested that they shelter their families and their property in the forts of al-Watih and al-Salalim and store their ammunition in the fort of Na'im. The Jewish fighters then dug themselves in inside the fort of Natat with Salam ibn Mashkam there egging them on. The two sides first clashed near the fort of Natat and a fierce battle ensued. It was reported that fifty Muslim fighters were injured that day; on the Jewish side Salam ibn Mashkam was killed and al-Harith ibn Abi Zaynab had to take command. He ventured boldly out of the fort of Na'im to challenge the Muslims, but the Khazraj forced him back inside. The Muslims intensified their siege of Khaybar and the Jews resisted with all their force. The days went by and the Messenger of Allah (saw) sent Abu Bakr to storm the fort of Na'im; he fought hard and returned empty handed. The next day he (saw) sent Umar and he too returned without any gain. Finally the Messenger of Allah (saw) called 'Ali and said to him, "Take this banner and go with it until Allah gives victory to you." 'Ali went off with it and when he neared the fort some people came out and fought with him. A Jew struck him so that his shield fell from his hand, 'Ali grabbed hold of a door by the fort and used it as a shield. He kept it in his hand until he had stormed the fort. Then he used the door as a makeshift bridge which the rest of the Muslims used to enter the stronghold. Once the fortress of Na'im was captured the Muslims turned on the other forts and proceeded to storm them one after the other until they reached the last two forts of al-Watih and al-Salalim. By this stage the Jews despaired and capitulated. They sought peace provided that the Messenger of Allah (saw) spared their lives. Allah's Messenger (saw) agreed and he allowed them to remain in their land, which became the property of the Muslims after its conquest, on condition that they handed over half their fruits and crops in exchange for their labour. Khaybar then yielded. The Jews of Fadak heard of Khaybar's collapse and they feared for their lives, so they sought peace in exchange for half of their assets. The Messenger of Allah (saw) prepared to return to Madinah via Wadi al-Qura, on his way the Jews of Tayma' accepted to pay the jizyah without a fight. This marked the end of any Jewish authority within the Arabian Peninsula. Thus the Messenger of Allah (saw) achieved stability at home by spreading his authority all over the Peninsula.

## 32. The Continuity Of The Islamic State

Once the Messenger of Allah (saw) had died the Sahabah agreed on giving the bay'ah to a Khaleefah to replace him (saw) as head of State. The Muslims continued appointing such a ruler until the year 1342 Hijri, i.e. 1924 CE. They called this man the Khaleefah, or Amir al-Mo'mineen, or just simply the Imam.

No Muslim becomes a Khaleefah without the bay'ah and the Islamic State followed that rule until the last days of its reign. The application of the bay'ah varied, in some cases the Khaleefah was given the bay'ah directly, some Khulafa' recommended another person other than their relatives, some passed it on to their sons or other members of their family, and others recommended more than one person from his family. However, this recommendation was not enough to make them the Khaleefah, they had to receive the bay'ah before taking office. No Khaleefah has ever been appointed without a bay'ah. The giving of the bay'ah also varied, it was taken from ahl al-halli wal 'aqd (prominent and distinguished figures), it was also taken from the people and in some cases it was taken from Sheikh al-Islam (the leading scholar). There were certain instances where the taking of the bay'ah was abused, however, it was still a valid bay'ah and not simply a succession to the post of Khaleefah, head of the Khilafah.

Each Khaleefah would appoint his assistants who were in some times called ministers, i.e. assistants. The Khaleefah would appoint the governors, the supreme judge, the army commanders and the State departments; this was how the structure of the State was constituted at all times. The structure never changed until the colonial disbelieving powers destroyed the 'Uthmani State and divided the Islamic world into many statelets.

Many internal events took place within the Islamic State throughout its history. This was not caused by non-Islamic motives, but was instead due to the prevailing circumstances at the time. Those who later interpreted the situation attempted to redress the status quo according to their own understanding. Each one of them attempted to exert an opinion to redress the existing state of affairs at the time. However, these different situations were still considered Islamic because they emanated from an Islamic understanding and opinion. Therefore such differences were connected with the Khaleefah himself, as a person, and not with the post of Khaleefah. For example, differences were about who should be Khaleefah, not about the ruling structure. Differences were restricted to small details and consequently had nothing to do with the basics nor with the outlines. Muslims never differed on the Book and Sunnah, the differences arose out of their understanding of the Qur'an and Sunnah. Similarly, Muslims never differed about the appointing of a Khaleefah, but on who should fill the position. They never differed about the obligation of implementing Islam comprehensively, nor about carrying it to the whole world. The Khulafa'a all ruled on that basis, implementing Allah's rules and inviting people to the deen of Allah. Some of them actually maladministered the rules of Islam due to misunderstanding them, and some of them maladministered the rules deliberately, however, they all implemented Islam and nothing else, they all held their relations with other countries, peoples and nations on the basis of Islam and for the sake of carrying the Message to the whole world. Therefore, internal differences never affected the expansion of the Islamic conquests and the spreading of Islam. The Islamic State went on conquering other countries with the aim of spreading Islam, from its inception until the 11th century Hijri (17th century CE). It conquered Persia, India, al-Qafqas (in Russia) till it reached the frontiers of China, Russia and the Qazween Sea (Iran-Russia) to the East. The Islamic State conquered al-Sham to the North; Egypt, North Africa and Andalus (Spain) to the West; as well as conquering the Anadhoul (Turkey), the Balkans, Southern and Eastern

Europe till they reached the Black Sea, together with al-Qaram (Crimean Peninsula) and the South of the Ukraine. The armies of the Islamic State reached the very gates of Vienna, it never stopped conquering other countries nor did it relent from conveying the Message of Islam until weakness crept in and the misinterpretation of Islam became apparent, then it rapidly deteriorated to the point where it began adopting rules and legislation from other systems alien to Islam, thinking that they did not contravene the Shari'ah, and finally it was destroyed.

The progress and prosperity of the Islamic State were matched by its intellectual strength, its creative ability and its ijtiḥad (analogical exertion on the Islamic texts). In the first century its conquests expanded the State vastly and ijtiḥad reached new dimensions as the State confronted new problems in the conquered lands. It exerted new laws for its fresh subjects, this has resulted in the exclusive application of the Shari'ah laws concerning new issues which arose in Persia, Iraq, al-Sham, Egypt, Spain, India and other countries dominated by the Islamic State, and in encouraging those countries to embrace Islam. This state of affairs demonstrated the genuine nature of its discoveries, creativity and ijtiḥad; for Islam, without any shadow of a doubt, is the truth and the right understanding of Islam makes it possible for people to see it clearly, implement it correctly, and teach its rules rightly. This pattern continued until the 6th century Hijri, then the creativity weakened and the ijtiḥad lessened, this resulted in the deteriorating of the State's structure. During this time the crusades occurred and these preoccupied the Muslims for a spell until they emerged victorious. Following this the Mamluks came and ruled over the Islamic State, though their ijtiḥad was weak and they paid little attention to the concepts, so the intellectual weakness deepened and the political thinking ailed. The subsequent invasion of the Tatars resulted in the loss of a great number of books thrown into the Dajla river and the destruction of this considerable cultural heritage only served to rub salt into the wounds by further exacerbating matters. The intellectual ailment which these factors engendered contributed to the stalling of ijtiḥad. The search for new verdicts concerning novel issues that arose was restricted to the issuing of fatawa and the twisting and misinterpretation of the texts. As a result, the intellectual and political level of the State waned. Then came the 'Uthmanis and they took over the ruling of the Islamic State. They concentrated on military power and conquests. They conquered Istanbul (Constantinople) and the Balkans and they stormed Europe in a spectacular manner, this made them the leading state. However, this did not lift the intellectual level, the military might was not backed up by an intellectual revolution and this resulted in the military power of the State evaporating by the day until it had completely vanished. In any case though, it did carry the Message of Islam and it managed to spread Islam successfully, for the people of the conquered lands embraced Islam and they accounted for millions. They are still Muslim to this day.

It was the diversity of Islamic opinions and the lack of understanding of Islam coupled with the reluctance of the Khaleefah to adopt specific rules for the ruling system, that resulted in some rulers, Khulafa' and the governors alike, running their affairs in a way which impaired the unity and the might of the State, despite the fact that new laws and legislation concerning the economy were adopted. However, these factors did not affect or endanger its existence. The rule of the governors was general and they were given wide mandatory powers enabling them to deputise for the Khaleefah over many issues. This developed in some governors a sense of supremacy, they became almost independent and self-governing and they simply contented themselves with the giving of the bay'ah to the Khaleefah and praying for him at their podiums, as well as issuing bank notes and coins bearing his name. These together with other peripheral and symbolic issues were all that linked them to him. The rule remained firmly within their grasp and this turned those Wilayahs (regions) into independent statelets,

like, for example, Hamdaniyeen and the Saljuqiyeen and others. The general rule of the wali, however, was not actually the direct result of the State disintegrating into statelets, and there is no proof that it affected the unity of the State. The Wilayah of 'Amr ibn al-'As over Egypt was general, so was that of Mu'awiyah ibn Abi Sufyan over al-Sham and these governors never undermined the Khaleefah's authority nor rebelled against him whilst he was a strong and powerful figure. However, when the Khulafa' weakened and accepted the status quo from the walis this trend took root and each Wilayah acted like a state of its own even though they remained part of a single State and under one system of government. Despite all this the State still remained intact, a single unity, where the Khaleefah always appointed and removed walis, and no matter how powerful a wali became, he never dared disassociate himself from the rule of the Khaleefah. The Islamic State was never at any time a confederation of Wilayahs, even at the height of the walis' independence, it always remained one State with one Khaleefah who was the only body with mandatory powers engulfing the whole State, including the small villages.

As for the issue concerning the Khilafah in Spain and the birth of the Fatimid 'Khilafah' in North Africa, these are different from the issues of the governors. In the case of Spain, the governors actually took over the Wilayah and declared independence, and the leading wali there did not give his bay'ah to the Khaleefah of the Muslims. He was subsequently called the Khaleefah of the people of that Wilayah, not over all the Muslims; the Khaleefah of the Muslims remained one and the ruling belonged to him. The Wilayah of Spain was always regarded as a Wilayah which was not under the rule of the Khaleefah; this also was the case for Iran during the 'Uthmani rule, there was no Khaleefah there, but Iran was a Wilayah outside the rule of the Khaleefah. As for the 'Khilafah' of the Fatimids in Egypt, this was not regarded as a second Khilafah State but an attempt to transfer the Khilafah to within the Messenger of Allah's household (family); this being based on an Islamic opinion stating that the Khilafah should remain within the Messenger of Allah's household. This concept is very much similar to that of the Abbasids when they took over the Khilafah from the Umayyads. They based this move on a political understanding that took root in Persia and Iraq where they gave the bay'ah to the new Khaleefah and then destroyed the Khilafah of the Umayyads. So was the case with the Fatimids. They gave a bay'ah to a Khaleefah with the aim of uniting the State by transferring the Khilafah to them, but their move was aborted and the Khilafah of the Abbasids survived. Therefore, we do not consider the transfer of rule from the Umayyad to the Abbasids as being a coup d'État but merely a change in the rulers, and we do not consider the emergence of a Fatimids 'Khilafah' in Egypt during the Abbasid Khilafah as constituting a multitude of Khilafah systems, but merely an attempt at transferring the rule from one group to another. Thus the Islamic State remained unique and undivided, it was not a group of states, what took place was a host of attempts to seize power with a desire to implement a certain Islamic understanding of government business. These attempts eventually came to an end and the Khilafah reverted to a single entity. The proof of the unity of the Islamic State despite the existence of numerous ruling situations can easily be demonstrated by considering that the Muslim could travel at that time from one Wilayah to another, from East to West, wherever Islam reigned, without being asked about his origins and without being restricted, for the Islamic household was one single land. This is how the Islamic State has always been uniting Muslims under one roof and implementing Islam at all times. It remained strong and prosperous until the colonial disbelieving forces destroyed it as a State in 1924 when they abolished the Khilafah at the hands of Mustapha Kamal.

### 33. The Internal Policy Of The Islamic State

The domestic policy of the Islamic State is to execute the rules of Islam at home. The Islamic State would implement these rules in the countries which were under its control. It organised and supervised relationships and transactions, implemented the hudud, carried out punishments, enforced high morals, ensured the performance of the Islamic rituals and acts of worship, as well as looking after the citizens' affairs according to the rules of Islam.

Islam has determined the method by which its rules are to be implemented on the people who submit to its authority, whether Muslims or otherwise. The Islamic State implemented the rules of Islam following this method, the method being the hukm shar'i itself, and this led to the solving of any issue which arose. Islam came to address all people, for Allah (swt) addressed all mankind with Islam as human beings and nothing else. Allah (swt) says,

"O you people! Adore your Guardian - Lord, who created you and those who came before you, that you may have taqwa (piety)." [TMQ 2:21]

He (swt) also says,

"O man! What has seduced you from your Lord?" [TMQ 82:6]

The scholars of Usul al-Fiqh (foundation of jurisprudence) considered the Divine Laws as being addressed to every human mind capable of understanding, be it Muslim or not. Imam al-Ghazali said in his book *Al-Mustasfa fi al-Usul*,

"Verily the governed must be a responsible person, the condition being that he is sane and able to understand speech; what qualifies the person to be liable to observe the rules is his human nature which enables him to accommodate the mental capability by which he receives and understands the commandments of Allah."

Therefore, all humans have been addressed by Islam. This address has taken the form of an invitation and an obligation, the first one being intended to invite people to embrace Islam and the latter intending to oblige people to adhere to its rules; this is regarding people in general. As for those whom the Islamic State rules over, Islam considers these as a group of humans who abide by that rule, regardless of their sect, race or creed. All that is required from them is fellowship (which is simply allegiance to the State and the ruling system). Ethnic minorities do not exist as all people are considered humans and citizens of the Islamic State so long as they fulfill the duties of citizenship. Every person holding the citizenship of the State enjoys the full rights decreed for him by the Shari'ah, whether he is Muslim or not, and anyone not holding that fellowship is deprived of these rights even if he were Muslim. If for instance a Muslim man had a Christian mother who held the Islamic citizenship and a father who did not, then his mother would qualify to receive maintenance from him and his father would not. If the mother claimed it from him the judge would rule in her favour because she would be classed a citizen of the Islamic State, whereas if the father attempted to do likewise the judge would reject his claim because he would not be classified as one of its citizens. Therefore, the Shari'ah considers those ruled by Islam as citizens and made the fellowship something which they all hold in common and which qualifies them to enjoy the rights of guardianship and welfare decreed by Islam through living in the Islamic State as citizens.

This is regarding their position from a ruling and guardianship point of view. As for the application of the Islamic laws, this is considered from a legislative and legal angle not a one of worship. Islam considers the ruling system implemented on the citizens as being a legislative and legal matter and religious nor spiritual one, in other words a Shari'ah matter

and not religiousness. This is so because the Shari'ah texts emphasise the area of legislation and the text has been decreed to deal with problems. The Legislator's aim is for us to follow the meaning and the content and not to stop at the texts, therefore the side of the 'illah (reason) behind the ruling is taken into consideration when extracting a rule. In other words, it is the legislative side of the text that is taken into consideration when extracting a verdict. This verdict, if adopted by the Khaleefah, becomes law and everyone is compelled to abide by and to execute it. Therefore, the submission of all people living in the Islamic State to the Divine laws is conclusive and irrevocable for the Muslims, it is their belief and their embracing of Islam which forces them to abide by all its laws because the submission by belief means the submission to all the rules which emanate from that 'aqeedah, so their embracing of that 'aqeedah obliges them to conclusively abide by all the laws brought by that 'aqeedah. Thus for the Muslims, Shari'ah is the legislative part of Islam, i.e. the Law part of the deen. They are compelled to carry out all its rules, whether those related to their relationship with Allah, which are acts of ibadah (worship), or those related to their relationship with themselves, such as their morals and diets, or those related to their relationship with others, these being the transactions and penalties.

The Muslims are united under the Islamic 'aqeedah and by the fact that the Qur'an and the Sunnah are the source of the Shari'ah evidences, principles and verdicts. None of them has differed on this issue at all. However, due to ijtiḥad, they have differed in the understanding of the Qur'an and the Sunnah, and as a result of this difference different madhahib (Schools of Thought) emerged as well as different sects. This was due to the fact that Islam encouraged Muslims to make ijtiḥad leading to the inevitable disparities in their understanding. Differences emerged in the understanding of the concepts related to creeds and in the methods of extracting the verdicts, as well as in the verdicts and opinions themselves. This resulted in the emergence of Islamic sects and madhahib. The Messenger of Allah (saw) had encouraged ijtiḥad and stressed that if the mujtahid (one qualified to extract rules) makes ijtiḥad and he errs he has a reward and if he is right his reward is doubled. Therefore, it was never surprising to find various Islamic sects like the people of the Sunnah, the Shi'ite and the Mu'tazila among others, and the emergence of several madhahib such as the Shafi'i, the Hanafi, the Maliki, the Hanbali, the Ja'fari, the Zaydi and others, and was not seen as odd or extraordinary. All these Islamic sects and madhahib embraced one single 'aqeedah, i.e. the Islamic 'aqeedah, they were all commanded to follow the obligations and abstain from the prohibitions of Allah (swt). They were all under the obligation to abide by the Shari'ah and not by any particular madh'hab. The madh'hab is only a particular understanding of the Shari'ah verdict which is followed by the muqallid (the one who is not a mujtahid) if he is unable to make his own ijtiḥad. The Muslim is ordered by the Divine rule and not by the madh'hab; he takes the rule by means of ijtiḥad if he can, otherwise he takes it by following a madh'hab if he is unable to make ijtiḥad. Therefore, all the sects and madhahib which embrace the Islamic 'aqeedah, and believe in the Qur'an and Sunnah - that they both constitute the only lawful source of Shari'ah evidences, Shari'ah principles and Shari'ah verdicts - these sects and madhahib are all Islamic, their advocates are all Muslims and the Islamic laws are implemented on them. The State should not therefore interfere with these groups nor with the followers of various madhahib as long as they do not deviate from the Islamic 'aqeedah, but if they deviated from the Islamic 'aqeedah, whether individually or collectively, this would be considered an act of irtidād (apostasy) from Islam and the punishment of apostates would be carried out on them. Muslims are compelled by all the Islamic laws, some of these laws are definite where only one opinion can prevail, like the cutting of the hand of the thief, the prohibition of usury, the obligation of zakah, and the

obligatory prayers being five or any other similar law. These laws are binding on all Muslims following one single opinion, for they are definite and decisive.

There are several laws and opinions on which the Muslims differed, this was because each mujtahid understood it differently from the other, like, for example, the qualities of the Khaleefah or the taking of the tithe on the Kharaj land or the rental of land, amongst others. In the case of such laws the Khaleefah adopts an opinion and obedience becomes compulsory on everyone, then everyone who holds a different opinion to that adopted by the Khaleefah should abandon that opinion and comply with the Imam's opinion. Thus the opinion of the Imam settles all the differences and the obedience to the Imam is compulsory on everyone. The Muslims are all obliged to execute the order of the Khaleefah concerning the opinions which he adopts and his opinion is binding on them both visibly and secretly, i.e. openly and secretly. Whoever implements a Divine rule other than the one adopted by the Imam will be sinful. Once the Khaleefah enacts a Shari'ah law it becomes the rule that the Muslims must abide by and the Shari'ah law concerning one issue cannot vary from one person to another. However, the Khaleefah does not adopt a particular law which concerns matters related to 'aqeedah because this would cause embarrassment and hardship on the Muslims. But if innovations and tendencies based on erroneous 'aqeedahs emerged the State would punish the culprits with suppressive measures so long as these did not lead to disbelief. If they did then the culprits would be treated as apostates. Also, the Khaleefah does not adopt any particular law which concerns matters related to worship because this too would lead to hardship for the Muslims, therefore the Khaleefah should not adopt any particular opinion in matters of 'aqeedah as long as these were Islamic, and he does not adopt any particular law in matters of worship, except for zakat, as long as these acts of worship are approved Divine laws. Other than that the Khaleefah can adopt and enact any particular law related to relationships and transactions, ranging from buying and selling, rental, marriage, divorce, maintenance, company acts, custody etceteras. He can also enact and adopt a particular law concerning the penal code, or concerning diet, clothing or moral issues, and the Muslims are obliged to obey him in whatever he adopts.

The Khaleefah has to implement the Divine laws related to acts of worship, he punishes those who abandon the prayer and those who do not observe the fast in the month of Ramadhan. He implements all laws regarding acts of worship in addition to all of the Divine laws and this is his duty. The obligation of prayer is not a matter open for ijihad and cannot be considered as a law being adopted, it is plainly the implementation of a Divine rule that has been conclusively established among everyone. As for the penal code, the Khaleefah adopts a law which all Muslims will be ordered to comply with, the same as for any other penal code. This is as far as the Muslims are concerned; as for the non-Muslims, these are the people who have embraced an 'aqeedah other than the Islamic one, they are classified under the following categories:

1. The people of the book.
2. The polytheists, among whom are the Majus (fire worshippers), the Hindus, the Buddhists and all those who are not People of the Book.

These people will be left alone and not interfered with, neither their beliefs nor their worship. They will be allowed to follow their own laws in matters of marriage and divorce according to their religion. The State will appoint a judge from their own people to settle their disputes in courts belonging to the State. As for their diets and clothing, they will be treated according to their own rules within the general and common order. People other than the people of the

book will be treated in the same way. The Messenger of Allah (saw) said concerning the Majus, "Treat them in the same way you treat the people of the book."

As for transactions and penalties, these are implemented on Muslims and non-Muslims alike. Penal judgments will be passed on non-Muslims in the same way as on Muslims without any prejudice. All those who hold the citizenship of the Islamic State are obliged to comply with the Divine laws related to transactions and penal codes regardless of their way of life, race or creed. They all have to abide by the Shari'ah, however, their adherence to the laws would be legislative and legal rather than religious or spiritual. They would therefore not be obliged to believe in them because that would constitute them being forced to embrace Islam; Allah (swt) says,

"No compulsion in the deen." [TMQ 2:256]

The Messenger of Allah (saw) has forbidden Muslims from interfering with or persecuting the people of the book about their belief, but they would be obliged to comply with the Islamic laws from a legislative and legal point of view. In conclusion, the Islamic State's home policy would be to implement the Islamic Shari'ah on all those who hold the State's citizenship whether they were Muslims or non-Muslims. The laws would be implemented as follows:

- A. All the Islamic laws would be implemented on the Muslims.
- B. Non-Muslims would not be interfered with regarding their beliefs and worship.
- C. The non-Muslims would be treated according to their beliefs in matters related to diets and clothing within the general framework of the law.
- D. Disputes related to marriage and divorce for non-Muslims would be dealt with by appointing judges from themselves in courts set up by the State and not in private courts, similar disputes between them and Muslims would be dealt with according to Islamic law by Muslim judges.
- E. The State will enforce all other Shari'ah matters related to relationships, transactions, penalties, business deals and others on every citizen Muslim and non-Muslim alike without prejudice.
- F. All those who hold the Islamic citizenship are subjects of the State, their guardianship and the management of their affairs is the duty of the State, without any prejudice.

### **34. The Foreign Policy Of The Islamic State**

Foreign policy is the State's relationship with other states, peoples and nations. This relationship, is in fact, looking after the affairs of the Ummah abroad. The Islamic State's foreign policy follows this trend and it is based on a fixed concept that doesn't change; this is the spreading of Islam and the conveying of the Message to every nation and every society. This is the very basis of the Islamic State's foreign policy. The basis never changes and never differs or varies no matter who rules the State. This basis has always been maintained and it has been carried out at all times, from the time when the Messenger of Allah (saw) settled in Madinah to the last day of the 'Uthmani State. Thus the basis has never changed. The Messenger of Allah (saw) set up the policy of the Islamic State on the basis of spreading Islam since the very first day he arrived in Madinah. He (saw) signed treaties with the Jews in order to concentrate on spreading the Message in Hijaz, then he signed the treaty of al-Hudaybiyah with Quraysh in order to spread the Message in the Arabian Peninsula. Finally, he (saw) sent envoys to the countries outside the Peninsula with the aim of establishing relations based on the spreading of Islam, by inviting them to embrace it. Afterwards, came his Khulafa', they also established links with all the other states on the basis of spreading Islam, and they too continued to carry the Message of Islam to the world. All the Muslim rulers who came to power competed in the spreading of Islam. The Ummayyads were actually more successful in conquering other countries and spreading Islam than the Abbasids, and the 'Uthmanis conquered more countries and spread Islam more than the Mamluks. This disparity was due, however, to the priorities the State would give to its foreign policy among other factors, but the spreading of Islam remained always the basis on which the relationship of the Islamic State with other states, peoples and nations was established. This has never changed throughout the rule of all the Khulafa'a. The duty of the State is to implement Islam at home and to carry its Message to the world, therefore the task of the Islamic State has always been to carry the Message of Islam. What actually makes the conveying and spreading of Islam the basis of the foreign policy is the fact that the Message is addressed to the whole of mankind. Allah (swt) says,

"We have not sent you but as a universal (Messenger) to men, giving them glad tidings, and warning them (against sin)." [TMQ 34:28]

Allah (swt) also says,

"O mankind! There has come to you a direction from your Lord." [TMQ 10:57]

He (swt) says,

"Say, O men! I am sent unto you all, as the Apostle of Allah." [TMQ 7:158]

And He (swt) says,

"This Qur'an has been revealed to me by inspiration that I may warn you and all whom it reaches." [TMQ 6:19]

He (swt) also says,

"O Messenger proclaim (the Message) which has been sent to you from your Lord, if you did not you would not have fulfilled and proclaimed His Message." [TMQ 5:67]

The Messenger of Allah (saw) duly obliged and set about conveying the Message to mankind, and when he died the Message continued to be conveyed by the Muslims. The conveying of the Islamic Message is in fact the continuation of the work that the Messenger of Allah (saw) had initiated. The Muslims followed his (saw) teachings and continued spreading the Message

of Islam. The Messenger of Allah (saw) said in his Khutbah al-Wada' (farewell speech), "Would the present tell the absent, for the absent may be more conscious than the listener." He (saw) also said, "May Allah brighten a man who listened to my saying, understood it and conveyed it as he heard it." This is why the conveying of the Islamic call has become the basis of the Islamic State's relationship with other states, nations and peoples during the lifetime of the Messenger of Allah (saw) and in the days of his Khulafa' after him. And this is the Divine rule which is decisive and conclusive, in evidence by the Book and the Sunnah and the general consensus of the Sahabah. Therefore, the foreign policy of the Islamic State is the conveying of the Islamic Message to the whole world. This policy is implemented by a fixed method that never changes, which is jihad, no matter how many times the rulers change. This method was ever present at all times, since the Messenger of Allah (saw) founded the State until the end of the Islamic State, and the method never changed throughout. The Messenger of Allah (saw) prepared the army soon after founding the Islamic State, he (saw) initiated jihad in order to remove the material obstacles that stood in the way of the Islamic da'wah. Quraysh was that material obstacle, so he (saw) decided to remove it. Then he (saw) went on to destroy Quraysh's existence, the very existence that stood in the way of the Islamic da'wah. He (saw) also removed and destroyed other obstacles until Islam engulfed the whole of the Arabian Peninsula. Then the Islamic State began knocking on the doors of other nations to spread Islam among them. It found that the existing ruling systems formed a material obstacle in the face of the da'wah, thus they had to be removed in order to reach the people themselves and invite them to Islam so that they could tangibly see and sense the justice of Islam, observe the prosperity and decent living under its banner, and invite the people to a better life without compulsion or coercion. Jihad continued as a method of spreading Islam, and by the means of jihad many countries were conquered. By means of jihad, kingdoms and states were removed and Islam ruled the same peoples and nations. Islam was spread and was embraced by hundreds of millions of people after they had been ruled by it, and the method used in implementing that foreign policy was jihad; it has never changed and it will never change.

Jihad is the call to Islam and the direct fighting in the way of Allah (swt), or the contribution by either money, opinions, or literature. It is an obligation, confirmed in the Qur'an and the hadith. The Muslims never started the fight against an enemy before proposing Islam or the jizyah. The Divine rule concerning jihad is that if the enemy was surrounded they would be invited to embrace Islam and if they accepted then they would become a part of the Islamic Ummah and fighting them would be forbidden. If they refused Islam then they would be asked to pay the jizyah and if they paid it their lives and assets would be safe and their country would become an Islamic homeland, they would enjoy the justice, equity, protection, guardianship and welfare enjoyed by the Muslims, and all their basic needs would be secured. Additionally, they would have to pledge allegiance to the State and the regime. If they rejected Islam and refused to pay the jizyah then their fighting would be lawful. Therefore, fighting the enemy would not become lawful until the call to Islam had been delivered to the people. The scholars have stressed that it is unlawful for us to fight those who have not received the Islamic call. Thus, public opinion about Islam, and the conveying of a true image of Islam, together with attempts to allow the Islamic laws to reach the people in order to enable them to realise that Islam offers them a true salvation even in a general manner should precede any fighting. The Islamic State should undertake political work such as giving a clear picture of Islam and spreading its concepts, campaigning and advertising Islam. Such moves should include muscle flexing and displaying the might of the Islamic State, including the courage and resolve of the Muslims. The Messenger of Allah (saw) would perform such manoeuvres, he would send envoys to the heart of the disbelieving countries. On one occasion

he (saw) sent forty men to the people of Najd to convey the Message of Islam. He (saw) also displayed the might of the State when he toured Madinah with his army the day he raided Tabuk. This was why the Messenger of Allah (saw) said, "I achieved victory by terrorising the enemy at a month's marching distance."

The Muslim army has always been feared. Europe always carried the concept that the Muslim army could never be defeated and this concept lasted for centuries. However, political manoeuvres are essential, especially those which help to spread the Islamic concepts and demonstrate the power of the State before resorting to armed struggle. Although jihad is the fixed method that never changes in the spreading of Islam, the political manoeuvres and other deliberate moves are all part of the preparatory ground, essential prior to the start of fighting. It is an important matter designed at determining the relationship of the State with other states, peoples and nations, whether these were economic or based on good neighbourly relations or any other basis that may help to spread Islam.

Therefore, the political concept on which the State's relationship with other states, peoples and nations is based is the spreading of Islam among them and the carrying of the Message to them. The method that should be followed is jihad. However, there are several ways and plans which the State initiates or adopts. It would for instance sign a good neighbourly treaty with some enemies and fight others. The Messenger of Allah (saw) approved such measures ever since he arrived in Madinah. The State could declare war against all its enemies simultaneously, Abu Bakr did so when he sent the armies to Iraq and al-Sham at the same time. The State could hold temporary truces, enabling it to create public opinion; that is what the Messenger of Allah (saw) did when he signed the treaty of al-Hudaybiyah. The State could also resort to local skirmishes as a means of terrorising the enemy; this was the case when the Messenger of Allah (saw) sent several expeditions out prior to the battle of Badr, and when the Ummayyads were in power they used the same tactics against the Romans, including summer and winter campaigns.

The State could also sign economic treaties with some countries, whilst at the same time not have trade relations with others; taking into account the interest of the da'wah for Islam. It could have diplomatic relations with some countries and not with others; this would be according to a carefully designed plan to boost the da'wah. The State could resort to propaganda and advertising in order to spread the da'wah, or it could use the method of divulging the enemies schemes and cold war.

The State's planning would be in accordance with the nature of the work to be undertaken and geared towards the benefit of the Islamic da'wah. These plans have always helped the spreading of Islam and eased the task of jihad, therefore they are necessary in implementing the foreign policy. Public opinion about Islam and the Islamic State has always been necessary to spread Islam by its fixed method, which is jihad in the way of Allah.

### **35. The Islamic Conquests Are To Spread Islam**

The mission of the Islamic Ummah in life is to carry the Message of Islam to the whole of mankind, therefore the Muslims had to be in touch with the world. The Islamic State was thus obliged to carry out this task which Islam has decreed in order to convey the Message. It was inevitable that the State would conquer other countries and achieve this with great success. These conquests were merely the implementation of an Islamic obligation, which is the conveying of Islam to people in a manner that would catch their imagination by implementing its rules on them and spreading its concepts among them. Therefore the Islamic conquests were not designed to exploit and colonise people, nor were they made to take advantage of the resources of their land. The only aim was to carry the Message of Islam to them in order to save them from the miserable lives that they were leading and the corrupt regimes that they were ruled by. This is clearly apparent, for that is why the Islamic State was founded, the Islamic conquests carried out and jihad decreed.

The Islamic State was established on a very strong basis, an establishment that saw it grow and expand, spread and conquer other countries. The seed of its establishment was destined to bear a universal State, not a local one, because its 'aqeedah is a universal one. It is an 'aqeedah for mankind and its system is universal, designed, as it was, for all humans. Therefore, it was only natural for it to spread and to conquer other countries, the nature of its establishment makes this inevitable. There was the Messenger of Allah (saw) taking the second bay'ah of 'Aqabah from the Muslims who pledged to fight alongside him all and sundry even if it led to the loss of their wealth and the death of their nobles, they pledged themselves to him in complete obedience in ease and in hardship, to tell the truth at all times. In Allah's service they would fear the censure of none, they pledged themselves to the Messenger of Allah (saw) to fight to the death in the way of protecting the Islamic da'wah and for their faithful service their reward would be Paradise. Those were the seed of the army of the Islamic State that carried the Message of Islam. Bearing all these factors in mind, why was this army established? What was its task? Was it not to carry the Message of Islam? Was that not the only reason for which they came and gave their pledge and were ready to die for its cause?

The Messenger of Allah (saw) had designed the plan of the conquests before his death. Once the Islamic state was established in the Arab Peninsula, he (saw) sent envoys to Chosroes and Caesar, this was part of his plan designed to spread the Message of Islam beyond the Peninsula which took place in the seventh year of Hijrah. He (saw) also sent envoys to other kings and princes inviting them to embrace Islam. His plan was also reflected in launching of the raids of Mu'tah and Tabuk and in the preparing of Usama's army. The Khulafa'a who succeeded him as heads of the State pursued his plan and executed it by conquering first the countries he (saw) had sent envoys to, inviting them to Islam. Other conquests soon followed, again always following the same method and principle. That is why the Islamic State was never selective in the countries it conquered, it never made any difference to the Muslims how difficult or easy was their task. And although Egypt was relatively easy to conquer and its resources were considerable compared with the harsh Saharan climate of North Africa with its poverty, the Muslims never took those factors into consideration because their main aim and ultimate goal was to spread Islam. This necessitated the conquering of every country regardless of its poverty or wealth and regardless of the resistance put up by its people. The spreading of Islam and the carrying of its Message ignores the wealth or the poverty factor and the acceptance or the refusal of the people. The main aim is simply the conveying of

Islam, to establish it as an intellectual leadership from which a way of life is derived. This Message should be carried to all mankind in all the countries.

The Qur'an has outlined for Muslims the reasons for fighting and the obligation of jihad, stressing that it should only be in the way of Islam and in carrying its Message to the world. The verses came thick and fast commanding the Muslims to fight in the way of Islam. Allah (swt) says in surah al-Anfal,

"And fight them on until there is no more oppression, and there prevail justice and faith in Allah." [TMQ 8:39]

And He (swt) says in surah al-Baqarah,

"And fight them on until there is no more oppression, and there prevail justice and faith in Allah; but if they cease, let there be no hostility except to those who practice oppression." [TMQ 2:193]

Allah (swt) says in surah al-Tawbah,

"Fight those who believe not in Allah nor the Last Day, nor hold that forbidden which has been forbidden by Allah and His Apostle, nor acknowledge the deen of truth, of the people of the Book, until they pay the jizyah with willing submission, and feel themselves subdued." [TMQ 9:29]

These verses, among others, have commanded the Muslims to perform jihad and indicated to Muslims the aim behind the conquests. It was these verses that motivated the Muslims to conquer other countries.

Therefore, the carrying of the Message of Islam was the basis on which the Islamic State was founded and for which the Muslim army had been prepared. Jihad was decreed and this was the method followed in the conquering of other countries. The carrying of the Message is what would bring back to the Muslims the Islamic State.

### **36. Consolidation Of The Islamic Conquests**

The Muslims conquered many countries and ruled them by Islam. Islam has commanded them to hold the reins of power and leadership. They are forbidden from being ruled by non-Muslims; Allah (swt) says in surah al-Nisa,

"Allah does not allow the disbelievers to have any authority over the believers." [TMQ 4:141]

Allah (swt) has given the 'izzah to the believers, He (swt) says in surah al-Munafiqeen,

"But honour belongs to Allah and His Apostle, and to the believers; but the hypocrites know not." [TMQ 63:8]

However, Allah (swt) did not give them the might, nor had He given them the rule and the leadership until they had acquired an Islamic mentality which made the task of ruling a means to implementing Islam and carrying its Message, not a desire to rule and reign. Until they had acquired an Islamic personality able to understand what the rule entailed and realised its responsibility before Allah (swt) the rule was kept away from them. The splendour of Islam was reflected in the actions of those rulers and in their speeches and it reached the people that they ruled over through the implementation of the Shari'ah. This inevitably resulted in the convincing of those people whom the Shari'ah laws were implemented upon to the extent that they embraced Islam in crowds. In time they too became Muslims. The might, leadership and the rule then belonged to them too. Their countries became an Islamic household and part of the Islamic State.

The Islamic conquests were asserted by ruling the conquered countries according to Islam, followed by the entering of the people into the Islamic belief until the conquest of any country by the Muslims became permanent to the Day of Judgment, detaching its people from their former state and transforming them from disbelievers to Muslims and transforming their country from a disbelieving household to an Islamic one, and remaining thus until Islamic rule was destroyed. However, its people remained Muslims and their country remained Muslim land even after the Islamic rule had perished and the authority of the State dissipated. Although the Islamic State is currently absent the countries originally conquered by the Muslims continue to be Muslim land and the people still remain Muslims, and this land is still potential for the return of the rule of Islam and the spreading of its authority over its territory.

Several factors have actually consolidated the Islamic conquests permanently and implanted the seeds of Islam to the Day of Judgment; among these factors was the legislation which made the governing of the countries easy from the very first day, the nature of the rule and the behavior of the rulers which persuaded the people to embrace Islam, and the implantation of the seeds of Islam into the hearts of those who embraced it forever. This was all possible due to the nature of the Islamic 'aqeedah and the Islamic laws, which can be summarised as follows:

1. Islam is rational in its 'aqeedah, intellectual in its opinions and rules. It compels whoever embraces it to believe in it rationally and understand its rules through using the intellect, thus the moment a human being embraces Islam he turns into a thinking person. This is so because his attention would be turned towards the creatures and universe created by Allah (swt), thus enabling him to realise the existence of his Creator and thereby encouraging him towards gaining knowledge of His rules, to extract them and solve his problems accordingly. Therefore, Islam will settle within himself conclusively and this will motivate him to understand its rules and implement them.

2. Islam obliges the Muslim to read and study. It is not enough for the Muslim to simply profess the two shahadahs (witnesses of faith) in order to become both knowledgeable about Islam and to understand it. He should study and acquire its culture deeply with a full awareness and clear vision. This knowledge broadens the Muslim's horizons and develops his perception which enriches his mentality, making him a teacher of others.

3. The nature of the Islamic ideology and of the Islamic Divine rules necessitate that the learner acquire them progressively, affecting in the process both the learner and the society he lives in. The Muslims learnt about Islam in order to implement it, they acquired its rules intellectually and this subsequently affected their emotions. Therefore, their feelings of life and its responsibilities were derived from an effective thought. This is why Muslims were always eager and zealous towards Islam, they had a wide thought and a rich knowledge and broad horizons because the Islamic 'aqeedah was deeply rooted in their hearts and minds. They also received the Islamic rules and opinions after a great deal of study and clarification and because the practical implementation of Islam was dominant.

Muslims did not learn Islam just for the sake of knowledge because this would have made of them simply books containing information about Islam. They also did not listen to Islam as a form of merely advice or as directions, this would have turned them into shallow minded individuals with no effect for their belief. The Muslims made sure that they avoided these two dangerous paths, i.e. learning about Islam for information, or taking it as mere advice and directions. The Muslims restricted their learning of Islam and its rules to the method decreed by Islam, which is the understanding of Islam clearly and deeply in order to implement it practically in all walks of life.

4. Islam is progressive, it leads the Muslims to new heights and sets them on the path of perfection. It obliges the Muslim to perform certain actions, the performance of which would lead the Muslim to a level of perfection where he can enjoy a spiritual superiority, peace of mind and true happiness. The human being, once raised to such a level, will remain there and will not degrade. However, if the reaching of such a level of perfection were hard to achieve, the maintaining of such a level is even harder, therefore, the actions performed by the Muslims have to be consistent and permanent, not temporary. This enables the human being to maintain that level of superiority and progress.

These actions are acts of worship, some of which are obligatory and others are complimentary. Performing the obligations by all the people would lead to realising a common level of progress, performing what is beyond the obligatory actions encourages people to stream ahead towards perfection.

Performing these acts of worship is not a hard task, nor is it a tiring or shattering experience, nor does it entail deprivation of life's pleasures and an abstention from its joyful and happy aspects. It does not lead to the suppression of instincts nor to a contradiction of human nature. No, the performance of such acts of worship, especially the obligatory ones, is an easy task quite within the capability of every human being no matter what his strength and will-power. Acts of worship do not prevent him from enjoying life. To perform the complimentary acts of worship is a mandub (desirable matter), the Muslims perform them with great zeal and eagerness, knowing that by doing so they will gain the pleasure of Allah (swt).

5. The Muslims conquered other countries in order to convey the Message of Islam and spread it amongst the people. As a result they felt that they were envoys of compassion and guidance. They would enter a country, rule it according to Islam and as soon as the people embraced Islam they would enjoy the same rights that the Muslims enjoyed and they would then become eligible to carry out the same duties that the Muslims had to perform. That

country would enjoy the same rights that the State provided for other Muslim regions and would become an integral part of the Islamic State because the Islamic ruling system is a system of unity. That is why the people of the conquered countries never felt as if they were being colonised, nor did they ever sense the slightest signs of colonisation. It therefore comes as no surprise that people embraced Islam in huge numbers, more so after they had witnessed, in practice, true Islam being implemented by Muslims, for themselves.

6. The Islamic ideology and rules are universal. It is permitted to teach them to all people and it is in fact an obligation to teach them to everyone so that they can taste the sweetness of Islam and realise its true nature. The Messenger of Allah (saw) would send governors, judges and teachers to rule people by Islam and to teach them its rules. The Muslims who came after him (saw) conquered many countries and set up rulers and teachers there who would teach the people Fiqh and the Qur'an. The people welcomed the Islamic education with open arms until their culture became Islamic, which included those people who chose not to embrace Islam.

7. The Islamic Shari'ah is a universal and comprehensive ruling system. Therefore, the Muslims never needed to study the laws of the country that they were about to conquer. They never needed to try and accommodate or harmonise between the laws they had brought to solve life's problems and the laws in existence within that country. They would conquer a country with the complete Shari'ah in their possession and they would implement Islam from the very first day they entered a country. Their method too was radical, no graduation and no patching up. The Muslims would not give any consideration whatsoever to the reality of the situation or the state of the country, simply because they conquered the country with the sole aim of conveying Islam to its people in order to change their corrupt state of affairs and their turbulent way of life. This necessitated the uprooting of the old regime and replacing it with a new regime in a most comprehensive manner. That is why it was always easy for the Muslims to rule the country from the very first day. Their rule would establish itself completely, they never suffered any legislative crisis, nor did they undergo a transitional period because they had their Message and it was an 'aqedah from which the systems, the legislation and the rules emanated. It is a Shari'ah that is valid for implementation on any human race, anywhere and at anytime.

### **37. Moulding Peoples Together Into One Ummah**

The Messenger of Allah (saw) died after the whole of the Arabian Peninsula had entered into Islam and after polytheism had been abolished. The Peninsula became an Islamic household, ruled entirely by Islam, according to its 'aqeedah and the systems that emanated from it. He (saw) died only after Allah (swt) had perfected the deen, completed His favour unto the Muslims and chose for them Islam as that deen, but not before he (saw) had begun to invite the neighbouring nations and peoples to Islam by sending envoys to their kings and rulers as well as by dispatching expeditions to raid the Roman frontiers of Mu'tah and Tabuk. Then came the Khulafa' al-Rashidun and the conquests continued. Iraq was inhabited by a mixture of Arabs and Persians who professed the faiths of the Christians, Mazdakiyya and Zaratshthyya and this was the first country to be conquered. Persia followed next and al-Sham after that. Persia was inhabited by Persians, Jews and Christians and ruled over by the Persians whilst al-Sham was a Roman colony where the Roman culture and Christianity were predominant; Syrians, Armenians, Jews, Arabs and some Romans lived there. Egypt was conquered after this and it too was inhabited by a mixture of peoples; Egyptians, Jews and Romans. Then North Africa where the Berbers lived under Roman dominance, was conquered. Along came the Ummayyads and they conquered Sind, Khawarizm and Samarqand, joining them to the Islamic State in the process. Al-Andalus was then conquered and became a Wilayah of the Islamic State. All these many countries varied in the nationality of their peoples; their language, religion, traditions, customs, laws and culture all differed. They naturally differed from each other in mentality and attitude, therefore the process of moulding these countries together and of uniting them into one single Ummah, adopting the same deen, language, culture and laws was a colossal and hard task whereby success would be a tremendous and extraordinary achievement. This happened solely through Islam and was only achieved by the Islamic State. Once those people had become engulfed by the banner of Islam and once they had been ruled by the Islamic State and embraced the Muslim belief they became a single Ummah, which is the Islamic Ummah. This feat was due to the effect of the Islamic rule and the Islamic 'aqeedah. Many factors led to the successful moulding of these disparate peoples into one Ummah, the most important of which were the following four factors:

1. The teachings of Islam.
2. The mixing of the Muslim conquerors in their daily lives and work with the conquered people.
3. The quick embracing of Islam by the people of the conquered countries.
4. The radical change in the way of life of those who embraced Islam and their transformation from one situation to a better one.

The teachings of Islam oblige Muslims to call for Islam and spread its guidance wherever and whenever possible. This necessitates jihad and the conquest of other countries in order to enable people to understand it and contemplate the truthfulness of its rules. It also implies giving the people the choice between embracing Islam or retaining their faith if they so wished, provided that they submit to its rules related to matters of transactions and penalties. This last point is important because it would develop harmony in the people's actions and dealings once the systems and rules that deal with their problems became unified, and it would also serve to make the non-Muslims feel like Muslims by being part of the society, sharing the same system, enjoying the peace of mind and the guardianship of the State.

The teachings of Islam necessitate that the ruled people should be looked upon from a human point of view and not a racial, tribal or religious one. Therefore, the Islamic laws related to social and penal matters must be implemented on every citizen equally, with no difference between the Muslims or non-Muslims; Allah (swt) says in surah al-Ma'idah,

"And let not the hatred of others to you make you swerve to wrong and depart from justice. Be just, That is next to piety; and fear Allah, for Allah is acquainted with all you do." [TMQ 5:8]

All people are equal in the eyes of the law and judiciary. The ruler looks after people's affairs and rules over them. The judge settles people's disputes without any prejudice, he looks upon them from a human point of view with the aim of solving their problems and settling their disputes. As well, the ruling system in Islam imposes true unity and equality between the different regions of the State. Islam commands the rulers to guarantee the basic needs of all the Wilayahs of the State with grants provided by the treasury, regardless of the amount of revenues being collected from each Wilaya, and regardless of whether these levies cover the expenditure or not. So Islam commands a single financial policy by collecting levies for the treasury from all the Wilayahs, thus helping to mould the conquered countries into Wilayas and making them into one State. This is what the Islamic ruling system would and did inevitably achieve.

The mixing of the Muslim conquerors with the indigenous peoples was one of the major factors that led to those people entering Islam and integrating with other Muslims. After conquering a country, the Muslims would take up residence there and begin teaching the people Islam and Islamic culture. They lived in neighbouring houses, they shared in all the life's affairs and became subjects of one country, being ruled by the same laws. They never were two different communities divided into conquerors and conquered, winners and the defeated. They were all citizens of the State who helped each other in their day-to-day life's affairs. The conquered people looked upon the rulers as being a different type of people whom they had never encountered before. They witnessed the equality with which they treated them by placing themselves on the same level and serving them and managing their affairs. They experienced fine treatment by rulers of high qualities and this made them lean towards the rulers and towards Islam. The rulers and other Muslims would marry from the people of the book (Jews and Christians), eat their slaughtered meat and their food and this served as an incentive for them to enter Islam because they witnessed the effect of Islam through the rulers and saw the light of Islam through the ruling system being implemented upon them. As a result these people became integrated and formed into a single Ummah.

The entering of the conquered countries into Islam was general; the people of each country embraced Islam in scores until the sweeping majority of the conquered countries' people was Muslim. People continued to enter into Islam until most of them were Muslims, thus Islam was not merely confined to the Muslim conquerors. By entering into Islam the people of the conquered countries integrated with the conquerors and became one single Ummah.

The general transformation that Islam caused in those who embraced it led to the lifting of the intellectual level of those new Muslims. This developed in them the Islamic 'aqeedah which became an ideological basis on which all the concepts were founded and by which the rightness and corruption of such concepts were measured. As a result Islam took them from sentimental belief (faith) to rational belief, from the worship of idols, fire, trinity and other similar types of worship, which lead to the decline in the perceptions and to triviality of thought, to the worship of Allah (swt), which leads to an enlightened mind and broad vision. Islam made them believe in the Hereafter and led them to imagine it in the way that the Holy

Book and the Sunnah have clarified and explained it - firmly establishing the principle of reward and punishment emanating from actions. So they conceived it as being the real life and this led them to acquire a true meaning of life and a real value for it, this being the path to another happier and eternal life. They held life with open arms and they did not neglect it. They took its means and enjoyed the pleasures and the wealth that Allah (swt), the one who set up this life and who determined its criteria and true perceptions, provided them with. Before Islam their criterion of life was based on benefit, this benefit was the only motive and the main aim of their actions. Then the criterion of their actions changed and came to be based on what is halal and what is haram. Their vision of life also changed and it too came to be based on the halal and the haram. This criterion became the driving force behind their actions, and its guidelines were according to what Allah (swt) had commanded and prohibited; the aim of directing their actions according to Allah's commands and prohibitions being the obtainment of Allah's pleasure. The value of the action became the sole cause behind the performing of the action. It would be spiritual if it were prayer or jihad or similar, it would be material if it were buying or selling or similar or the action would be moral if it was a trust or an act of compassion etc.. People began differentiating between the motive behind the action and the value of the action and as a result their conception of life became different to them from their previous one. It became a true conception about the reality of life measured by a criterion that Islam had set, this being the commands and prohibitions of Allah (swt) - i.e. the halal and the haram.

Islam gave the people a true meaning of happiness. Happiness had been, in their original view, the satisfying of the organic needs and body desires. It came to be transformed into gaining the pleasure of Allah (swt). This entails true happiness because true happiness means total and permanent peace of mind and this can never be achieved merely through satisfying the material pleasures and desires. It can only be achieved through obtaining the pleasure of the Lord of the universe.

This is how Islam affected the viewpoint of the people who embraced it. Their viewpoint about life and the actions which they performed in this life changed. Their order of priorities also changed, some went up in value and others came down. Life to the human being was at the top of his list of priorities to begin with and the ideology came second. Then Islam came and reversed the situation so that the ideology came to the top of the human being's priorities in life. As a result of this the Muslims began to devote their lives to the service of Islam because they correctly considered that Islam was more precious than life and it was only a natural corollary for the Muslim to endure hardship and sacrifice in the way of Islam. Life's matters came to be placed in their appropriate order of priority, life became honourable and dignified and the Muslim acquired a constant peace of mind once he set before the whole world the supreme high and fixed ideal which is the pleasure of Allah (swt). People's concept of the highest ideal changed therein. In the past the people had different and ever changing ideals before they acquired the one and only supreme ideal. This resulted in the changing of the things that mattered to them and in the changing of the concept of what constituted virtues. The basis of virtues used to include things like personal courage, individual decency and respectability, sectarian backing, boasting about wealth and noble descent, generosity to the point of extravagance, faithfulness to the tribe or clan, mercilessness in revenge and other similar acts. Then came Islam and changed all that. It made of all these qualities commands, which the human could take or leave according to Allah's decrees, not according to the benefits they generated, nor to the pride or prestige which they entailed, nor because they were traditions or customs or a heritage one had to preserve. Islam defined the obligation as being the submittance to Allah's commands and prohibitions. It enjoined the submitting of the individual, tribal, popular and national interests to the commands of Islam only. This is

how Islam transformed the mentalities and attitudes of the people who embraced it. It changed their personalities and their evaluation of man, life and the universe. It completely altered their criteria concerning all life's matters. People began realising that life held a special meaning which was perfection and nobleness. They acquired a fixed supreme ideal which was securing the pleasure of Allah (swt), and that was the happiness which they pursued and sought after vigorously. They therefore became different creatures from those which they had once been.

These four major factors helped to detach all the people who embraced Islam from their former circumstances. Their concepts and visions of life became unified into one concept and one vision; the management of their affairs sprang from that concept. Their interests also became unified and they became one interest, i.e. the interest of Islam. Their goals in life became a single goal, which was the spreading of Allah's word. In total, the integration of these people into Islam was inevitable and they eventually became a single Ummah, the Islamic Ummah.

### **38. The Causes Of The Islamic State's Weakness**

The Islamic State is based on the Islamic ideology and derives its strength solely from that ideology. It is its main cause of progress and prosperity and the basis of its existence. The Islamic State came into existence and established itself in a powerful fashion due to the strength of Islam. It conquered wide areas of the world in the space of less than a century despite the fact that horses and camels were its only means of communication, and all its conquered peoples, countries and nations embraced Islam within a short period of time despite the fact that its means of spreading the Message were limited to the word of mouth and the pen. Islam made all this possible by being the driving force behind the State.

The enemies of Islam realised this and knew that the weakening of the Islamic State would be impossible as long as Islam remained strong and deeply rooted within the hearts and minds of the Muslims, and as long as the understanding of Islam remained sound and its implementation accurate and comprehensive. They therefore resorted to finding the means which would weaken the Muslims' understanding of Islam and their implementation of its rules.

The methods which the enemies of Islam used to weaken its understanding were numerous. Some were related to the texts and others to the language used in conveying and teaching it, still other methods used were related to Islam's conformity with reality. They set about adding false narrations to the ahadith of the Messenger of Allah (saw) which were never said, and they managed to fabricate and include in them non-Islamic meanings and concepts that contradicted Islam in the hope that these would be adopted by the Muslims thus deviating them and alienating them from Islam. Indeed, they managed to do just that, and they spread these false ahadith among the people. The Muslims came to be alarmed by this and they in turn divulged the evil schemes of those zanadiqah. The Muslims smashed their evil ring and aborted their conspiracy. Scholars and hadith experts then rose to the challenge and began gathering and listing the hadith by relating each hadith to the narrator, his qualification, and the date each hadith was narrated, underlining each hadith and classifying it into its correct category. The hadith was then classified as sahih (genuine) and da'if (weak) and they then came to be protected. The narrations of the hadith were restricted to the three generations after the Sahabah and no other narration reported after them was accepted. The narrators were all identified individually and the books of ahadith were also classified accordingly until the Muslims were able to relate the genuineness of any hadith or the weakness or falsehood of any other by relating to its evidence and its narrator. The Islamic State dealt harshly with those zanadiqah and most of them were actually executed for their part in falsifying the ahadith of the Messenger of Allah (saw). Overall then, the conspiracy did not have any damaging effect on Islam nor on the State. The enemies of Islam then resorted to attacking the Arabic language as this is the language by which Islam is conveyed and they attempted to separate it from Islam. They did not succeed at first because the Muslims went forward in their conquests armed with the Book, the Sunnah and the Arabic language and they would teach the people all three. The people embraced Islam and became fluent in Arabic and some of them actually became distinguished mujtahideen like Imam Abu Hanifah, others became exceptional poets like Bashshar ibn Burd and some became eloquent writers like Ibn al-Muqaffa'. The Muslims devoted a great deal of attention to the Arabic language. Imam Shafi'i disallowed the translation of Qur'an and disallowed praying other than in Arabic. Those who did endorse the translation of Qur'an, like Imam Abu Hanifah, in any case did not call the translated text Qur'an at all. Arabic remained the focus of attention because it is the fundamental part of Islam and a necessary precondition of ijihad. The understanding of Islam

from its sources does not come about but in Arabic and the extracting of the Divine rules cannot be accomplished except in Arabic. However, the attention, care and importance given over to the Arabic language diminished by the end of the sixth century Hijri when the rulers, who did not appreciate and realise the importance of the Arabic language, came to power. They therefore neglected that area and as a result ijtiḥād was stalled as the exertion necessary to deduce the Divine rules became impossible due to the lack of fluency in the Arabic language. At this stage the Arabic language became separated from Islam and the State's understanding of the Divine rules became blurred and blurred and as a consequence the implementation of the rules also became blurred. This contributed a great deal towards the ailing of the State, it diminished its ability to understand and tackle new issues thus leading to its failure to solve the problems that arose or to solving them in an erroneous way. As a result, problems accumulated in the face of the State and this caused it to wane and to dwindle.

This was as far as the Islamic texts and the language were concerned. As for the applicability of Islam to the realities of life, the trend of merging Indian philosophy with Islam emerged. This was translated into asceticism and the seeking of the Hereafter and this led to many young people turning away from life's pleasures and to their adopting a passive life. They renounced their role of being active members of society and consequently this resulted in a big loss to the Islamic State and Muslims in general. As a result of this the State lost many talented young men who could have devoted themselves to the Message of Islam instead of resorting to asceticism and self punishment. Later the cultural invasion by the West brought with it a culture alien to Islam, the West duped the Muslims by claiming that they took this culture from them and that the systems which it brought did not contradict with the Islamic rules. The West had brought legislation which contravened the Divine laws and still it managed to persuade Muslims that they did not. This affected the Muslims a great deal and led to the Western culture creeping in and influencing the Muslims. The Muslims began to see life as being based on benefit. During the 'Uthmani rule some Western laws were adopted, a Western banking system was established, riba justified, and the penal codes stalled and replaced by Western penal codes. Despite the fact that fatawa were issued to justify the lawfulness of such acts they had a disastrous effect on the State and led her astray from the Islamic rule. This deviation from Islam extinguished the strong Iman Muslims once had, took the State away from the right path and subsequently led to its weakness and disintegration.

This was as far as understanding Islam was concerned, as for its implementation, many factors contributed to the maladministration of the Divine laws. One such factor was the political parties, each in turn wanted to impose their own opinion and they resorted to military means in order to seize the authority and rule, in order to implement that opinion. The Abbasids did just that by seizing Persia and Iraq and using them as a platform until they had managed to seize total power and restrict the ruling clan of Bani Hashim. Then came the Fatimids, they took over the wilayah of Egypt and established a state there so as to use it as a support point with the ultimate aim of transferring the rule of the Islamic State to the sons of Fatimah daughter of Allah's Messenger (saw). Their action caused a setback to the Islamic State and stalled the Islamic conquests, whilst it resulted in the establishment of a second power vying for control over the Khilafah despite the fact that the Islamic State is a state of unity and it is forbidden for the Muslims to have more than one Khaleefah at the same time. The Messenger of Allah (saw) said in reference to this, "If a pledge of allegiance is taken for two Khaleefah's, kill the latter of them." These factors contributed greatly to the weakening of the State, as well as leading to a suspension of the conquests and thereby resulting in neglect towards conveying the Message of Islam. However, what in fact led those political parties to resort to that type of methodology in order to seize power, was as a result of what

took place during the rule of the Ummayyads. The Ummayyads introduced the method of handing over the Khilafah to the heir apparent, who was then given the bay'ah. This turned the bay'ah into a mere protocol and killed the hope of reaching the position of ruling by its means. Mu'awiyah for instance passed on the authority to his son and took the bay'ah for him later. Then every Khaleefah followed in the same trend, taking an oath for their heirs and then asking the people to give them the bay'ah. The people were restricted to giving the bay'ah to whoever the Khaleefah had nominated, rarely did they give the bay'ah to anyone else. This method pushed those political parties to resort to force in order to seize power. Despite the fact that Abu Bakr adopted the method of nomination, its maladministration by the Ummayyads led to those problems arising. Abu Bakr had in fact consulted the Muslims over this issue and as a result 'Umar and 'Ali emerged as the two candidates. Nomination was then given to 'Umar and he was elected as Khaleefah after the death of Abu Bakr and took of the bay'ah from the Ummah. This was actually in accordance with the Divine rules. The Khulafa' of Bani Umayyah instead maladministered this rule and nominated their sons, brothers or relatives. In some cases they even nominated more than one person. Such maladministration led to the deprivation of the Muslims from giving the bay'ah to whoever they wished and this in turn led to the weakening of the State because of the alienation that it entailed. At first though this did not have much effect on the State because it was so powerful, but the signs soon emerged when the State weakened.

Maladministration was not simply confined to the State, the Wilayas came to be infected by the same malaise. The Abbasids' silence over the action of 'Abd al-Rahman al-Dakhil in Andalus ensured this. His action led to the amputation of a big part of the State when he ruled Andalus independently, as did the governors who succeeded him - some of them even acquired the title Amir al-Mo'mineen. Although Andalus did not declare total independence from the Islamic State, it was, nevertheless, ruled over separately and this resulted in weakness creeping into the State's structure. Eventually this facilitated its seizure by the disbelievers while the Islamic State was at the height of its glory and at its most formidable strength. The State could do little to save Andalus's downfall and this was due to the disintegration of Andalus's administration. That was on the Western front; in the East the Walis were given general and wide mandatory powers which triggered their desire of leadership and authority. They therefore ran their Wilayas according to their own way and the Khaleefah agreed to this state of affairs. He was content with the praise which he received from their podiums and by the mention that decisions were taken on his behalf or by the issuing of currency bearing his name or with the continued receipt of Kharaj revenues from them. These Wilayas became, as a result like little independent statelets, this was the case with the Wilayas of Saljuqiyyeen and Hamdaniyyeen and many others. This too became a contributory factor in the weakening of the State.

Then came the 'Uthmanis and they transferred power to themselves and united most of the Muslim land under their leadership. They took up the Islamic conquests throughout Europe and resumed the conveyance of the Message of Islam. However, this outburst in activity was only backed by the solid Iman of the first 'Uthmani Khulafa' and the military might of the army, it was not based on a clear understanding of the Islamic concepts and a comprehensive implementation of Islam. Therefore, these conquests did not achieve what the conquests of old had achieved, and the strength of the rulers did not embrace all areas of the Islamic State, consequently the State soon waned, then collapsed until finally it ceased to function. This was as a direct result of the factors mentioned and of the many other conspiracies woven against the State.

The contributory factors which led to the weakness of the State can thus be summarised as follows, weak understanding of Islam and maladministration of the Divine rules. Therefore, what would bring back the Islamic State would have to be the clear understanding of Islam; and what would preserve its strength would have to be the safeguarding of such a clear understanding, and the proper implementation of the Divine rules at home and the conveying of the Message of Islam to the world.

### **39. The Disintegration Of The Islamic State**

The intellectual weakness of the Islamic State began in the fifth century Hijri when some scholars called for the phasing out of ijihad. This signalled the downfall of the State. Although there were still some mujtahideen left, intellectual weakness had already taken root and this affected the State enormously. Disintegration began creeping in and the State waned. By the time the crusaders came the State was in no position to repel the danger. The State became engaged in continuous battles with the crusaders which were to last for two centuries. The crusaders emerged victorious at first and managed to occupy parts of the Islamic State, then the State managed to recapture the occupied land and vanquish the crusaders. Rule and authority were taken over by the Mamluks who neglected the Arabic language and the intellectual and legislative side of ruling. The door was slammed in the face of ijihad and the understanding of Islamic concepts weakened considerably, as a result. Scholars were forced to content themselves with taqleed (imitation) and the ailment worsened. This, however, only affected the State from within, since the State remained strong and its international standing remained intact. The Islamic State remained a superpower feared by all other nations, occupying the largest and strongest part of the inhabited world at the time. The 'Uthmani State took over control of most of the Islamic world. In the 9th century Hijri (15th century CE) it united the Arab lands under its rule and its dominion stretched over wide areas of land. The 'Uthmani State concentrated on its military might and the expansion of its authority as well as the glamour of its rule and power. It also concentrated its efforts on the conquests and neglected the Arabic language despite the fact that it is essential in order to understand Islam and one of the conditions necessary in order to effect ijihad. The 'Uthmani State never paid attention to Islam from the intellectual and legislative point of view, consequently its level of intellect and legislative ability dropped dramatically. Its strength was superficial due to this intellectual and legislative ailment. At the time, this weakness was not noticed by the Islamic State because it was at the prime of its glory and at the height of its power and military might. It used to measure its ideology, legislation and culture with that of Europe and at this time it found itself superior in every respect. This comparison reassured the State and served to make its weakness seem both bearable and negligible. At that time Europe was still plunged in total darkness, chaos and unrest. Europe attempted to launch a renaissance but it failed each time. The 'Uthmani State was in a much better situation compared with Europe and as a result it viewed itself as being superior in culture and in its system of ruling, which led the 'Uthmani State to ignore the internal malaise that it was suffering from. Thus, it unfortunately failed to notice its intellectual stagnation, legislative maladministration and the fragmentation of the Ummah.

What turned the 'Uthmani State's attention from internal problems was its sweeping victory over Europe - its seizure of the Balkans and the South-eastern part of Europe. This victory sent a shock to the rest of Europe and everyone became resigned to the fact that the Islamic army could never be defeated and that nobody could ever successfully face the Muslims. This was when the orientalist idea began. Its meaning then, was to abort the danger of the 'Uthmani invasion headed by Mohammed al-Fatih, this was in the 9th century Hijri (15th century). The invasion continued until the end of the 11th century Hijri under the leadership of Sulayman al-Qanuny. The conquests were concentrated up until the middle of the 12th century Hijri (18th century) during which time the continuity of the struggle remained a major source of strength to the Islamic State. The strength of the 'aqeedah of the Muslims and the specific concepts that they carried - although those concepts were not clear in their minds - had given the State a great moral boost and this helped to maintain that military might. Additionally, the presence of the Islamic ruling system, despite its maladministration, and the

state of affairs in Europe which was plunged into intellectual, social and legislative decline, all that contributed to the continuity and superiority of the Islamic State. At that time the Islamic State could have attempted to understand Islam properly and devoted much more effort to the teaching of the Arabic language and the encouragement of ijthad. The State could have devoted more effort to the intellectual and legislative side so that it established a strong foundation with which to launch its conquests while marching on a strong footing with sound concepts. This would have enabled the State to conquer the rest of the world in the name of Islam. The State would have been in a position to strengthen its structure and flood the world with the Islamic culture and in the process save the world from corruption and mischief. However, none of this actually happened. Encouragement of the Arabic language was limited to giving the Arabs a few teaching posts and other minor positions of jurisprudence which had little effect on improving the knowledge of the Arabic language and had no effect in awakening the intellect. In order to revive the Arabic language the State should have made it the official language, as it should always have been in the Islamic State, but this was not carried out. Again, because nothing was done on the intellectual and fiqhiih (jurisprudent) fronts the feeble and misguided efforts of the State resulted in the status quo continuing and the State remaining on the same wrong track. As soon as the second half of the 12th century Hijri (18th century) came the trend was reversed and the internal weakness became apparent because the State was founded on the remains of the Islamic system which was maladministered and on confused concepts, some of them Islamic and others alien to Islam. The rule as a whole was more within the Islamic system's milieu rather than being an Islamic system itself. This was due to the lack of understanding of the Islamic concepts and also to the maladministration of the Islamic ruling system because of the lack of ijthad and mujtahideen. In the 13th century Hijri (19th century) the scales of history swung between the Islamic State and the non-Islamic countries. The awakening of Europe had just begun and its results became evident, meanwhile the consequences of the intellectual stagnation coupled with the maladministration of the Islamic system finally caught up with the Muslims. The 19th century CE witnessed a serious intellectual revolution in Europe. A considerable effort was made by the European philosophers, writers and intellectuals and a comprehensive change in the European concepts occurred with the aim of uniting the people of Europe. Many movements were established and these played a great part in the emergence of new opinions about life. Some of the most significant events that occurred were the amendment of the political and legislative systems as well as in all their ways of life. The spectre of the despot monarchy gradually disappeared to be replaced by republican systems based on representative rule and national sovereignty. This had a huge effect towards setting the awakening of Europe in motion. The industrial revolution also had a telling effect on the European scene. There were also numerous scientific discoveries and inventions. Taken all together these factors boosted Europe's intellectual and material progress. This material and scientific progress resulted in swinging the scales of power in Europe's favour at the expense of the Islamic world.

On the international scene the concept of Orientalism came to be altered so that it was no longer simply a question of containing the impending Islamic danger to Europe, but whether the Islamic State should be left as it was or whether it should be divided up. The European countries had different opinions due to the difference in their interests. This change in the concept of Orientalism and the change in Europe's fortunes, reflected in its intellectual and scientific progress together with the industrial revolution, led to the political swing between the Islamic State and the unbelieving states in favour of the latter option.

The cause of the political revolution in Europe were the attempts made by its intellectuals to establish a new way of life. They adopted a specific viewpoint concerning life and embraced

a new 'aqeedah, then they founded a system on the basis of that 'aqeedah. This led to the change of material concepts and the order of values which created a general transformation in their lives and this set the industrial revolution in motion, unlike the situation in the Islamic world or in the 'Uthmani State that was ruling over it. Instead of looking and reflecting deeply on its ideology, instead of stimulating new concepts and resorting to ijihad to solve its problems according to the rules emanating from its 'aqeedah, instead of taking up science and industry, instead of undertaking all this the State panicked and became confused about how to react to Europe's change of fortunes. It remained idle due to this confusion and this further led to its backwardness in science and industry. It therefore lagged behind the other European countries in terms of material progress and prosperity. The secret behind this decline was that the 'Uthmani State was an Islamic State, Islam was the 'aqeedah of the State and its system, the concepts of Islam were its concepts and the Islamic viewpoint about life was its viewpoint. It should have in fact looked into the new concepts that were emerging from Europe and measured them against its own ideological criterion. Then it should have studied the new problems from an Islamic perspective and given its verdict on those concepts and problems with the help of adequate ijihad according to the Islamic viewpoint. Finally, the validity of such concepts would have to be judged. But the State did none of this simply because the Islamic concepts were not clear to it, it did not have any specific concepts because it did not take the Islamic 'aqeedah as an intellectual foundation on which all the concepts were based, it was only a traditional 'aqeedah for it. The basis on which the State was founded, which was the 'aqeedah and concepts, was not clear to the 'Uthmani State and the system was also idle due to the absence of ijihad. The culture, which can be considered as the host of concepts concerning life, was not crystallised and was not linked to the State's actions. This led to the intellectual decline and put a halt to progress. As a result of all this they were taken aback by the intellectual, cultural and industrial revolution they witnessed in Europe, however, they did not react for they could not come to a decision about whether to take what Europe had achieved or not. They could not differentiate between what is allowed to be taken of scientific inventions, discoveries and industry and what is forbidden to be taken from a particular philosophy, since a philosophy determines the viewpoint about life, and culture, which represents a group of concepts concerning life. Therefore they froze and they did not react and it was this which led to the stagnation of progress while the European progression gathered momentum. All this was in turn caused by the lack of a proper understanding of Islam by failing to realise the contradiction between the Islamic concepts and the European ones. Another cause was their failure to distinguish between science, industry and inventions which Islam encourages Muslims to acquire, regardless of the source, and the philosophy, culture and ideology which can only be adopted from Islam.

The 'Uthmanis did not properly understand Islam, it was not at all clear in their minds. Such blindness led the Ummah and the State to the adoption of a casual life to which little attention was spared towards the system. Meanwhile its enemies held onto a specific system and carried it out. Europe became the holder of an ideology, regardless of its creed whereas the Islamic Ummah who held the right ideology lived in the shadow of that ideology. That ideology, however, seemed distant and a thing of the past because the Ummah lived in a State where the ideology was maladministered. Despite the fact that the Messenger of Allah (saw) said, "I have left with you two things if you held to you would never go astray, the Book of Allah and my Sunnah" and despite the fact that the State was Islamic and the Ummah was Muslim, and despite the fact that the intellectual and fiqh wealth was available and accessible to everyone, the State did not grasp the meaning of that hadith and did not take the necessary steps to go back to the roots of Islam the 'aqeedah and the system. The State did not make use of this wealth, a wealth which no other nation possessed or possesses.

Indeed the Islamic State did not benefit from this wealth because as soon as ijihad was stalled and intellectual activity ceased the Islamic concepts became blurred in the minds of the Muslims and the Islamic cognisance declined. Books and other cultural heritage's were kept on the shelves and only very few learned people and scholars were left. The desire to study and research thus diminished. The huge cultural and intellectual wealth within the State and society was not sought after because the State never encouraged the pursuance of it. Intellectuals sought knowledge for the sake of knowledge, or they sought knowledge to earn a living, rare indeed were the ones who sought knowledge to benefit the Ummah and the State. Consequently, the scientific, cultural and legislative activity was non-existent and the understanding of Islam was in disarray. Muslims understood Islam spiritually rather than intellectually, politically and legislatively. The original idea of Islam and the method by which this idea is implemented was blurred. Muslims could not correctly perceive the Qur'an and the Sunnah and began to think that Islam was merely a spiritual religion. They began comparing Islam with other religions from a spiritual point of view, instead of looking at Islam as being an 'aqeedah and a complete way of life. It therefore came as no surprise when the Muslim Ummah, under the leadership of the 'Uthmani State, stood idle and confused before the European revolution. It remained visibly behind without being affected by the economic progress which Europe was enjoying nor by the multiple inventions that took place there, nor by the industrial revolution that had been launched all over the continent. The effect that this European material progress had on the State was somewhat minimal and confused and never resulted in any notable benefit nor did it generate any material progress or any gain. The 'Uthmani State could not stop the decline that was taking it into backwardness and disintegration, this was due to their failure to differentiate between science and culture and between culture and civilisation. They were therefore confused about whether to adopt the European achievements or to leave them alone. Most Muslims saw them as being contradictory to Islam and so they called for the prohibition of the adoption of European achievements.

A vivid example of this was when printing machines were invented and the State decided to print the Qur'an, some scholars prohibited its printing and they began issuing fatawa prohibiting anything new and of accusing anyone who studied the natural sciences of being an disbeliever. They accused every intellectual of being an atheist and a zindiq. A small group of Muslims at that time saw the need for adopting everything from the West, their science, education, culture and civilisation, those were the ones who had been educated in Europe or in the missionary schools that had infiltrated the Islamic world. At first that small band of Muslims made little impact on society. In the last years of the 'Uthmani State the notion stating that the West adopted its culture from Islam and that Islam does not forbid the adoption of what conforms to it and that which does not contradict it, spread among the Ummah. The West succeeded in spreading this concept until it was adopted by the majority of the Muslims, especially the educated ones. Most of these were the scholars and learned jurists, they came to be known as modern scholars or reformists. However, due to the real contradictions between the Western and Islamic cultures and because of the obvious differences between the Western and Islamic concepts about life the attempts to harmonise the teachings of Islam with the Western culture were doomed to failure. The reformists lost their way and in the process alienated themselves from Islam. Their bewildered pro-Western approach failed because they could not correctly perceive the Western concepts and they neglected in the process the inventions, science and industry as they moved further away from Islam. The Ummah relied heavily on those reformists and as a result confusion spread. The State was unable to take a decisive stand and the Ummah rejected all means of material progress ranging from science, inventions and industries so she became weak and unable to

stand or to defend herself. This weakness encouraged the enemies of Islam to mutilate the Islamic State bit by bit while the Ummah was powerless to react. The missionary invasion, disguised as scientific co-operation, began infiltrating the Muslim land. At the same time the various movements that emerged succeeded in destroying the structure of the State and the concept of nationalism, implanted and avidly encouraged by the West, took root all over the Islamic State; in the Balkans, Turkey, Arab countries, Armenia, Kurdistan and many other places.

In 1914 the State was in dire straits, it entered the First World War a shadow of its former glory and emerged defeated. Then finally it was destroyed. Therefore, the Islamic State disintegrated and the dream that had eluded the West for many centuries was finally fulfilled. The West wanted to destroy the Islamic State in order to destroy Islam. With the disintegration of the Islamic State the ruling system in the Muslim land became non-Islamic and the Muslims have lived ever since under a non-Islamic banner. Since that time they have lived under disbelieving regimes ruled over by laws of disbelief, they have become unsettled and their situation has deteriorated.

## 40. The Missionary Invasion

Europe began its invasion of the Islamic State in the name of science and it set aside huge budgets for that purpose. In fact the invasion was colonial, disguised as missionary work in the name of science and humanitarian aid. This invasion was designed to enable the departments of political intelligence and the departments of cultural colonisation to settle in Muslim countries until they became the heart and spearhead of the Western colonisation. Colonisation began when the Muslim world opened its gates to it and allowed it in through the guise of the missionary associations, which were mainly French, English and American. As a result of this both French and English influence infiltrated the Muslim world via these missions. They actually became the driving force behind the nationalist movements, encouraging Arab and Turkish nationalism, as well as in control of orientating the educated Muslims. There were two main intended objectives behind this, the first was to separate the Arabs from the Muslim 'Uthmani State, which they named Turkey in order to stir up Turkish jingoism, so as to destroy the Islamic State; the second was to alienate the Muslims from the real bond of Islam, since they had no knowledge of any other bond. The missionary institutions managed to achieve the first stage of their scheme, but the second remained unfulfilled. It was left to the nationalist orientation of the Turks, Arabs, Persians and others to be the remaining wedge to split the unity of the Muslims and to blind them from their guiding principles. The missionary associations went through several phases and their effect was telling all over the Islamic world. The weakness and decline we suffer today is as a result of these associations. It was the colonialist powers who positioned the first brick of the barrage which they placed in the path of our advancement and which came between us and our ideology - the ideology of Islam.

What prompted the Europeans to establish missionary societies in the Islamic world was borne out of what they have faced of the strength of the Muslims and their patience in jihad, during the crusades. This was due to the steadfastness of the Muslims and their perseverance in jihad. When the crusaders clashed with the Muslims on the battlefield they were relying on two factors according to their own calculations and they held out high hopes on those two factors leading them on to exterminate Islam and the Muslims for good.

The first factor was their reliance on the Christians living in the Muslim world, those living in the Muslim countries especially in al-Sham numbered many. These Christians were very religious people and the Europeans regarded them as brothers in faith. They thought that they would conspire against the Muslims and spy for them under the pretext that they were waging a religious war.

The second factor was that the Europeans were relying on their huge numbers combined with their formidable strength, knowing all the while that the Muslims were divided and at odds with one another as the disintegration of their unity had already begun. The Europeans thought that once they had defeated the Muslims they would subjugate them for good and destroy them, then their deen would merely become a formality. However, their hopes were dashed and their predictions faltered. They were stunned and amazed when they saw the Arab Christians fighting alongside the Muslims on the battlefield unaffected by the propaganda launched by the Europeans. What the Europeans had not understood and had consequently overlooked was that Arab Christians lived alongside the Muslims in the Islamic homeland, enjoying the same rights as the Muslims and fulfilling the same duties towards the State. The Muslims would eat of their food, marry the Christian women and share in the day-to-day matters of life together with the Christians because it was Islam that safeguarded their rights.

All the Khulafa'a and governors adhered to that rule and duly implemented it in the Islamic State. Al-Qurafi and Ibn Hazm stated,

"That it would be our duty to protect the people of the dhimma if aggressors attacked our land, and we should die protecting them if necessary. Any neglect of such a duty would be a breach of the rights of the dhimma."

Al-Qurafi also said,

"The Muslims' duty towards the dhimmi's would be to be gentle and lenient towards their weak, help their poor, feed their hungry, clothe them and talk to them gently. Muslims should accept and endure the harm of their neighbours even if they were able to repel the harm, this was as a mercy to them and not out of fear of or glorifying to them. They should give good advice in all matters, repel anyone harming them, protect their assets, families and honour and all their rights and interests, and do right by them like any generous and pious Muslim should do."

With this in mind it was only natural for the Christians to fight alongside the Muslims. The Europeans' surprise was even greater when the second factor which they had relied on failed to materialise. They occupied al-Sham and defeated the Muslims comprehensively, committing the worst atrocities in the process. For example, they were the first to apply mass evacuation on the Muslims and this trend continued throughout their wars with the Muslims. They thought that everything had gone well for them and that the Muslims would never again stand against them. However, the Muslims remained determined to expel them from their land, and despite the fact that the crusaders occupied Muslim land for about two centuries, during which times they established kingdoms and principalities, the Muslims eventually managed to expel them from it.

The Europeans searched for the secret behind these turn of events and found that it lay in Islam, its 'aqeedah being the source of the formidable power which the Muslims possessed and its rules, which safeguarded the rights of the non-Muslims, being the main reason behind the cohesion between the citizens of the Islamic State. In their time the colonialist disbelievers thought of new ways by which they could invade the Islamic world and deduced that the best way would be by way of a cultural invasion through missionary work, this was in order that they might gain the support of the Christians and initiate doubt among the Muslims vis-à-vis their deen. This, it was hoped, would raise the doubts of the Muslims in their deen and shake their 'aqeedah, with the aim of creating divisions between them and the other citizens of the Islamic State, thereby weakening the power of the Muslims. The colonialists managed to execute their plan. At the end of the 16th century they established a huge missionary centre in Malta and made it their headquarters from which they conducted their missionary onslaught on the Muslim world. To begin with, missions were sent out from there. After a while they saw the need to expand their activities and so they moved to al-Sham in 1625 and tried to establish missionary movements there as well. However, their activities remained very limited and they did not progress beyond establishing a few small schools and publishing a few religious books. In fact they suffered a great deal of persecution, opposition and hostility from everyone. They managed to last until 1773 when the missionary activities of the Jesuits were abolished and their institutions shut down, except for some insignificant missions like those of the 'A'zaryyn' missionaries which, despite their continuing presence, reduced the effect of the missionaries and their missionary work to a non-existent level. Their influence came to be confined to Malta until 1820 when the first missionary centre was established in Beirut and the missionary work began again in earnest. They faced great difficulties at first, but they persisted with their activities. Their first area of concern was

religious preaching and religious culture, their education programme remained limited and weak. In 1834 the missionary expeditions spread out all over the region of al-Sham, a college was opened in the village of A'ntoura in Lebanon and the American mission transferred its print shop from Malta to Beirut in order to print and distribute its books. The noted American missionary Ely Smith was very active at this time, he had been working in Malta as a voluntary in charge of the mission press and he had arrived in Beirut in 1827. After one year there, fear and boredom drove him out and he returned to Malta. He next returned to Beirut in 1834 and together with his wife they opened a school for girls. His area of work broadened and he devoted his life to working in al-Sham, Beirut in particular. All these efforts and the efforts of many others helped settle the missionary movement and revive it again. An opportunity presented itself to the missionaries when Ibrahim Pasha adopted the primary education syllabus and implemented it in Syria. The syllabus was inspired by the Egyptian educational system which in turn was taken from the French system. The missionaries took advantage of this opportunity and contributed to the educational movement from the missionary point of view, expanding their printing works in the process. On the back of all this the missionary movement prospered and took part effectively and openly in the educational movement. They succeeded in making the citizens of the Islamic State boil with anger against each other in the name of religious freedom and managed to initiate among the Muslims, Christians and Druze various kinds of religious activities related to the 'aqedah.

When Ibrahim Pasha retreated from al-Sham, unrest, fear and anarchy broke out and people became divided among themselves. The foreign delegates, especially the missionaries, seized the opportunity and due to the meagre influence of the 'Uthmani State in al-Sham, began igniting civil strife. After a period of just one year, in 1841, serious disturbances broke out in the mountains of Lebanon between the Christians and the Druze. The situation deteriorated and under the pressure and influence of the foreign states the 'Uthmani State was talked into designing a separate ruling system for Lebanon, dividing the province into two parts; one part would be occupied by the Christians, while the Druze would occupy the other. The 'Uthmani State appointed a governor over both parts, aiming therefore to avoid any clashes between the two sects. This system did not succeed, however, because it was not natural. Britain and France became involved in the dispute and incited civil strife wherever the official authorities attempted to quell the trouble. The British and the French used these clashes as a pretext to interfere in Lebanon's affairs. The French sided with the Maronites and the British sided with the Druze, this led to the renewal of disturbances in 1845. The scenes were horrifying and the attacks were extended to include Churches and monasteries. Theft, killing and pillage became common practice, this prompted the 'Uthmani government to send her foreign affairs inspector to Lebanon in order to use his mandatory powers to quell the trouble once and for all. He, however, could not achieve anything significant, although he managed to appease the tension a little. Meanwhile the missionaries intensified their activities and in 1857 the Maronites began calling for a revolution and armed struggle. The Maronite clergy incited the farmers against the feudal lords and they attacked them fiercely in the North of the country, thus the revolution was ignited and it spread to the South. The Christian farmers now rose against the Druze feudal lords and the British and the French backed their respective allies. Civil strife spread rapidly all over Lebanon as a result of this. The Druze began to kill all Christians indiscriminately, whether they were clergy or ordinary people until thousands of Christians were either dead or displaced and homeless, such were the ferocity of the clashes.

The waves of disturbances and violence spread to the rest of al-Sham. In Damascus a fierce campaign of deep hatred was waged between its Muslim and Christian inhabitants which finally led to the Muslims attacking the Christian district in 1860 resulting in them committing a massacre. This was accompanied by pillaging and mass destruction until the

State was forced to intervene militarily in order to put an end to the disturbances. Although the State managed to restore calm and order, the Western countries saw it as an opportunity to interfere in al-Sham and so they sent their warships to its shores. In August of the same year France sent a division of her territorial army to Beirut which began the task of quashing the revolution. This was how the 'Uthmani State was infested by civil strife in Syria and Lebanon. Its true cause was the Western states who were trying to meddle in the internal affairs of the 'Uthmani State. This they did and they managed to force the 'Uthmani State to design a special ruling system for Syria, dividing her into two Wilayas and giving Lebanon special privileges. From out of these events Lebanon became separated from the rest of al-Sham and it was granted local autonomy, governed by a local administration headed by a Christian ruler and assisted by an administrative council representing the local residents. Since then, foreign countries have managed the affairs of Lebanon and have made it the centre for their activities. Lebanon therefore became the bridgehead from which the foreign powers infiltrated into the heart of the 'Uthmani State and Muslim land.

Meanwhile, the missionaries adopted a new policy which they did not employ before. The Missionaries did not content themselves with just schools, printing shops and clinics, but went further to establish associations. In 1842 a committee was set up to establish a scientific association under the auspices of the American mission. The committee's work lasted for five years until it had managed to establish an association called the 'Association of Arts and Science'. Its members included Nasif al-Yaziji and Butrus al-Bustani, who were Lebanese Christians taken on board because they were Arabs, Ely Smith and Cornilious van Dyke, who were American, and Colonel Churchill, who was English. The objectives of the association were at first vague, it had the tendency to teach science to adults, as well as teaching youngsters at school. The association encouraged adults and youngsters alike to learn the Western culture, orientating them according to the missionary plan. However, despite the huge efforts put in by the association it only managed to recruit fifty active members in the whole of al-Sham in two years. They were all Christians, mainly from Beirut, no Muslim or Druze whatsoever, joined the association. Colossal efforts were made to expand and activate the work of the association but to no avail. The association collapsed after five years from its initial establishment without reaping any significant results except for the desire of the missionaries to establish more associations. Therefore, another association was founded in 1850 and it was named the 'Oriental Association'. It was founded by the Jesuits under the guardianship of the French Jesuit Father Henri Debrenier and all its members were Christians. It followed in the footsteps of the 'Association of Arts and Science' lasting only a short time before collapsing as its predecessor had done. Afterwards, several associations sprang up all over the place, but all were doomed to failure and they collapsed as before. A new association was founded in 1857 which adopted a slightly different method, no foreigners whatsoever were allowed to join and its founders were all Arabs. Somehow it managed to succeed and some Muslims and Druze actually joined, the association accepted them because they were Arabs. Its name was the 'Syrian Scientific Association'. It became successful thanks to its activities and its Arabic affiliation and as well because of the absence of foreigners among its membership. Its members managed to affect other people to join and they gathered support for the association until 150 members had enrolled in it. Among its administrative staff were some noted Arab personalities such as Mohammed Arsalan from the Druze and Hussein Bayham from the Muslims. Personalities from all Arab Christian sects joined, the most noted of them being the son of Ibrahim al-Yaziji and the son of Butrus al-Bustani. This association had in fact outlasted all the others. Its programme was designed to accommodate all sects and be the spark for Arab nationalism. However, its hidden objective was in fact colonial and

missionary dressed in the name of science. It manifested itself in the spreading of Western culture and education.

In 1875 the 'Secret Association' was formed in Beirut, it was actually based on a political concept. It began encouraging the concept of Arab nationalism. Its founders were five young men from amongst those who had been educated in the Protestant college in Beirut, they were all Christians whom the missionary parties had managed to affect. Following this group's formation of the association, a small number of members were recruited by them. The association seemed to be calling, through its declarations and leaflets, for Arab nationalism and political independence for the Arabs, especially those in Syria and Lebanon. However, its actual work and its real programme was concerned with a different objective entirely, its aim was to cast strange desires and false hopes into the hearts of the people. It called for nationalism, Arabs and Arabism and encouraged animosity towards the 'Uthmani State, calling it the Turkish state. It worked towards separating religion from the State and towards making Arab nationalism as the basis of life. Despite the fact that the association always championed Arabism those in charge referred repeatedly in their literature to Turkey accusing her of snatching the Islamic Khilafah from the Arabs, of violating the Islamic Shari'ah and of abusing the deen. This neatly demonstrates the true nature of the association and the real objective for which it had been founded, i.e. to cause unrest against the Islamic State, to create suspicion and scepticism about the deen and to establish political movements based on non-Islamic principles. What is in fact a certainty concerning these movements is that they had been initiated by the Western powers. It was they who established them, monitored their progress and managed them. They also wrote reports about their activities. For instance, the British consul in Beirut sent a telegram to his government on 28th July 1880 saying, "Revolutionary leaflets came into circulation, Midhat is suspected to be the source, despite this, the situation remains calm. Details in the post." This telegram was dispatched in the wake of a leaflet distributed on the streets of Beirut and posted on the walls there. The telegram was soon followed by several letters sent by the British consuls in Beirut and Damascus. The letters were accompanied by copies of the leaflets which the association had distributed and should therefore rightly be regarded as reports on the movement set up in the Protestant college which began its activities in al-Sham. The association's activities were more evident in al-Sham, although they took place in other predominantly Arab areas as demonstrated by what the British commissioner in Jeddah wrote to his government in 1882; in a report about the Arab movement he stated, "However, news has reached me that even in Makkah itself some intellectuals have begun talking about freedom, it seems to me from what I have heard that a plan has been designed aiming at uniting Najd with the land between the two rivers, i.e. the South of Iraq, and appointing Mansur Pasha as ruler, as well as uniting 'Asir and Yemen by appointing 'Ali ibn 'Aabid to rule over them."

Britain was not the only interested party, France too displayed a great deal of interest. In 1882, one of the French officials in Beirut voiced the French concern by saying,

"The spirit of independence is well spread and I noticed during my stay in Beirut the dedication of Muslim youths in establishing schools and clinics and in reviving the country. What is worth mentioning here is that this movement is free of any sectarian influence, this association welcomes the membership of the Christians and relies on them to participate in the nationalist activities."

A French national wrote from Baghdad,

"Everywhere I went I was faced with the common feeling, on the same scale, of hatred for the Turks; as for the concept of initiating a collective action to get rid of this much hated

situation, this is very much under way. In the horizons a wind of Arab movement is gathering strength and is about to be born. This people who have been oppressed for a long time are about to proclaim their natural status within the Muslim world and direct the destiny of this world."

Missionary work in the name of religion and science was not merely confined to the focus of the attention of the US., France and Britain, but extended to most of the non-Islamic states, including Czarist Russia who sent missionary expeditions and Prussia (Germany) who sent a group of 'sisters' (the nuns of Carodt) to participate with other missions. In spite of the difference of opinion among the various missions and Western delegates regarding their political programmes, which took into consideration their international interests, their objective was the same; the preaching of Christianity and the spreading of Western culture in the East coupled with the arousal of the suspicions of the Muslims towards their deen, pushing them to resent it and to regard their history with contempt whilst leading them to praise the West and its way of life. The missionaries carried out their preaching according to their great hatred of Islam and the Muslims. They disdained the Islamic culture and its way of life and they regarded the Muslims as backward barbarians, which remains the ill-considered opinion of nearly every European. The results that they achieved are reflected today in the concentration of disbelief and colonialism in our lands.

## 41. The Crusaders' Animosity

One of the French learned writers Count Henri Decastri wrote in his book entitled 'Islam' in 1896, "I cannot imagine what the Muslims would say if they heard the tales of the mediaeval ages and understood what the Christian orators used to say in their hymns; all our hymns even those which emerged before the 12th century emanated from one concept which was the cause of the crusades, these hymns were filled with hatred towards the Muslims due to the total ignorance of their religion. As a result of those hymns and songs, hatred against that religion became fixed in people's minds, and the erroneous ideas deeply rooted, some of which are still carried nowadays. Everyone used to regard the Muslims as polytheists, disbelievers, idol worshippers and apostates."

This is how the Christian clergy in Europe described the Muslims and their deen. The allegations in the mediaeval ages were horrible and these were used to incite the feelings of hatred and animosity against the Muslims. The Christian world became affected and the crusader wars took place. After lasting two centuries resulting in the defeat and the humiliation of the Christians, the Muslims began to reconquer the West in the 15th century when the Islamic State entered Constantinople. Then in the 16th century the Muslims swept across southern and eastern Europe and carried Islam to its peoples. Millions of the inhabitants of Albania, Yugoslavia, Bulgaria and other countries embraced Islam in the process. Once again the crusader animosity was revived and the Orientalist concept emerged, which was concerned at the time with resisting the Muslim armies, halting the Islamic conquest and lessening the threat of the Muslims. This deeply rooted animosity in the minds and hearts of the Europeans prompted all Christians in Europe to send their missionaries to Muslim land in the name of science and culture. The missions took the shape of schools, clinics, associations and clubs. The Europeans devoted almost unlimited resources and huge efforts to the missionary work. They combined their efforts and methodology despite their differences in policy and interests. Peoples and states were united behind the missionary effort since it was conducted by their consuls, ambassadors, delegates and missionaries.

The crusader hatred harboured by the Westerners, especially in Europe and more so by Britain, and their deeply rooted animosity and wicked malice were the cause of our eventual humiliation in our homeland. General Allenby said in 1917 when he entered al-Quds,

"Only today the crusades have ended."

This was simply a genuine expression of what he really felt. It reflected the hatred and malice he harboured and the same could be said about every European that fought in the battles - cultural and military - against the Muslims, and Allah (swt) says,

"Rank hatred has already appeared from their mouths; what their hearts conceal is far worse."  
[TMQ 3:118]

What Allenby said was indeed most loathsome, and what his country, Britain, harboured was even greater without a doubt; this goes without saying for every European.

This malice and hatred has existed ever since the days of the crusades and it is still perpetuated today. What we face in terms of oppression, humiliation, colonisation and exploitation - in addition to the political aspect - is in fact an act of brutal revenge on the Muslims. Indeed it is particular to the Muslims.

Professor Leopold Weiss (Muhammad Asad) wrote in his book Islam at the Crossroads,

"Verily the renaissance, or the revival of science and European arts which owed a great deal to Islamic and Arabic sources, used to be attributed to the material contact between East and West. Europe has indeed benefited a great deal from the Islamic world, but she never acknowledged or recognised this favour, nor did she show any gratitude by easing her hatred to Islam, in fact this hatred grew stronger and deeper over the years and at times reached uncontrollable proportions. This hatred engulfed the popular feeling and was triggered each time the word Muslim was mentioned. The hatred became a part of their popular heritage until it took root in the heart and mind of every European man and woman, and more astonishing though was that it remained alive even after all the stages of cultural change that took place. Then came the era of religious reform, when Europe became divided into sects, and each sect stood in the face of other sects, armed to the teeth, ready for battle; however, animosity towards Islam remained the same within every sect. Soon after, a time came when religious fervour diminished but the hatred of Islam remained as strong as ever, a clear example of this was delivered by the French philosopher and poet Voltaire, although he was an arch enemy of Christianity and the Church in the 18th century, he also was at the same time expressing his feelings of hatred and arrogance towards Islam and the Messenger of Islam; after a few decades, there came a time when the Western intellectuals began exploring foreign cultures and looked upon them with some kind of sympathy and open-mindedness, however when it came to Islam, the traditional disdain began infiltrating their scientific researches in an extraordinary factional way; and the wide gap which history dug up between Europe and the Islamic world remained unbridged, then the contempt for Islam became an integral part of the European mentality."

It was on this basis that the missionary associations mentioned above were established. Their aim was to preach the Christian religion and to arouse suspicions in the Muslims about their deen, thereby leading them to hold it in disdain within their hearts and to blame their own failures on it. On the other hand, the aim of the associations was also political and the consequences were in fact horrendous on both accounts until they reached unexpected proportions. The missionary movements were founded on the basis of wiping out Islam by libelling it, by creating problems and misgivings about it and about its rules, in order to come between the people and the way of Allah (swt), and to alienate Muslims from their deen. Behind these missionary movements came the Orientalist movements who had the same target and the very same objective.

Efforts and resources were unified throughout the whole of Europe and a crusade was waged against Islam for the second time; this time it was a cultural war which poisoned the mind by what they had distorted from the Islamic laws and Islam's high values, the poisoning of the young Muslim minds by what they alleged about Islam and the history of the Muslims in the name of scientific research and scientific fairness. It was in reality the cultural venom which was far more dangerous than the crusader wars. The missionaries carried out the spreading of their poisonous filth in the name of science and humanity. They used to do it in the name of Orientalism. Professor Leopold Weiss wrote,

"The reality is that the first Orientalist of modern times were Christian missionaries working in the Muslim countries, the distorted picture they fabricated allegedly from Islamic teachings and history was expertly designed to guarantee a negative reaction and influence the European opinion towards the idol worshippers, i.e. the Muslims; however this twisted concept continued despite the fact that Orientalist studies had been liberated from the missionary influence, stripping the Orientalism from any religious and ignorant fervour that would misguide it. As for the Orientalist' hostility to Islam, this was an inherited instinct and a natural characteristic derived from the effects of the crusader wars."

This inherited animosity is the one that sparks the hatred in the hearts of Westerners against the Muslims. It is the one that portrays Islam, even in Muslim countries, to Muslims and non-Muslims as being the bogey of humanity, or this demon which would destroy the progress of humanity. This is in fact to conceal their real fear of Islam, for they know that if Islam were deeply implanted in the hearts and minds of the people it would signal the end of the hegemony of the disbelieving colonial powers over the Islamic world and the return of the Islamic State to once again resume the carrying of the Message of Islam to the world - and indeed it will return insha'Allah - for the sake of humanity and the West itself. The work of the missionaries would eventually turn into grief and sorrow for them; Allah (swt) says,

"The disbelievers spend their wealth in blocking the way of Allah, and will go on spending still more of it. But in the end, these very efforts of theirs will become a cause of their regret; and they will be overcome." [TMQ 8:36]

The inherited animosity is the one that supports any anti-Islamic movement. You will find the Westerner exploring Taoism, Hinduism, Buddhism, or Communism without any hatred or prejudice at all. Whereas, if he were to explore Islam malice, hatred and contempt would soon appear despite the fact that Muslims were defeated by the colonial disbelievers. The Western clergy - backed by the colonialists - still actively conspire against Islam and they will never abate from libelling Islam and the Muslims and from degrading Muhammad (saw) and his Companions, or from injecting slander into the history of Islam and of the Muslims. All this is to get their revenge and to strengthen the hold of the colonialists.

## 42. The Effects Of The Missionary Invasion

The missionary invasions were regarded as the avant-garde which paved the way for European colonialism to conquer the Islamic world politically after first conquering it culturally. Through conquering Istanbul and the Balkans and by bringing Islam to Europe the Islamic intellectual leadership was carried by the Muslims to the countries of the West. When that leadership faltered the Muslim countries became the target of the West, which consequently carried its intellectual leadership to the Muslim world where it encountered fertile ground for its culture and its concepts about life; these were sowed in different ways under the name of science, humanism and religious preaching. The West did not stop there either, as well it libelled the Islamic culture and the Islamic concepts about life by directing its onslaught against Islam. This adversely affected the educated class and the politicians, in fact it deeply affected all those who carried the Islamic culture, and in time it came to affect the majority of the Muslims.

As for the educated people, the colonial powers had designed in their missionary schools, before the occupation, and in all the other schools after the occupation, their own educational syllabus and cultural programmes according to their particular philosophy and culture and their own special concepts about life. They made the Western personality the basis of this culture and of their renaissance, history and environment the main sources of the material which we Muslims eagerly overflow our minds with. Neither did they stop at that, but they went as far as interfering with the details of the syllabi making sure that no partial items stepped out of line nor contradicted the general principles which represented their philosophy and culture. This was the case even concerning the Islamic deen and history lessons; both these syllabi had been designed on a Western basis and according to Western concepts. Even today the Islamic deen is taught in Islamic schools as a spiritual and moral subject conforming to the Western concept of religion. It is taught in a way which is far from reality and far removed from the real facts of life. The life of the Messenger of Allah (saw) is taught to our youth in a way which is cut off from the Prophecy and the Message; it is taught in the same way that the lives of Napoleon or Bismarck are taught for instance. As a result this does not create in their hearts any of the proper emotions or concepts. The subject of worship and morals, which is included in the religious syllabus, is given from a beneficial point of view. Thus the teaching of the Islamic deen has likewise come to be set upon the same course as the Western concepts of personal benefit and interest.

Educating the Islamic history has also been similarly stained due to ill-intention and misunderstanding, and has been blackened in the name of historical fairness and scientific research. What rubs salt into the wound is the fact that some of the educated Muslims have taken up the teaching of history and the editing of historical works according to the missionary method and syllabus. Consequently, all the educational syllabi have been designed according to Western philosophy, and, through following its syllabi, this has made most of the intellectuals Westernised. They digested the culture, loved it, and led their lives according to its concepts until most of them became averse to the Islamic culture and critical of it when and where it contradicted Western culture. Those Muslims became Westernised in their culture, a culture controlled by the Western viewpoint, they were faithful to that culture to the point whereby they idolised the foreigner and adopted his culture. Many of them assumed the Western character, they became hateful of Islam and Islamic culture, in the same way that the Westerner was, they believed that Islam and the Islamic culture was the cause of the decline of the Muslims, as they had been led to believe by them. Consequently, the missionary

expeditions achieved great success when they managed to pull across to their side the intellectual Muslims who then fought with them against Islam and the Islamic culture.

The situation spread even further to include not only those educated in Europe and in foreign schools, but also to those carrying the Islamic culture as well. They were stunned and incensed with the colonial Western powers' actions in libelling their deen, and so began their response to the libel. Their response was initiated without realising whether such was either right or wrong in the first place. In their eagerness to defend Islam from the libel of the foreigners they did not check their reply; they were certain that Islam was being wrongly accused, but all the same they began the dangerous process of twisting the Islamic texts in order to make them comply with Western concepts. As a result their reply was weak and it was this, in effect, which proved very helpful to the missionary invasion rather than the reply itself. What is even worse is that the Western culture, which is contradictory to the Islamic culture, became part of their concepts which they readily accepted and unjustly and wrongfully attributed to Islam. Most of them began by saying that the West had taken its culture from Islam and the Muslims, and then they started twisting the Islamic rules to suit that culture, despite the flagrant contradiction between the Islamic and Western cultures. Therefore, once they had demonstrated to themselves that their 'aqeedah and culture were consistent with the Western culture they came to accept the Western culture in its entirety; this meant that they had accepted the Western culture and abandoned their Islamic culture, and this was precisely what the colonialist wanted and what the West was aiming for when it concentrated its missionary work and its colonial expeditions. By having their intellectuals educated in Western schools and colleges, and through their lack of understanding of Islam relative to those who had an Islamic education, the Muslims by and large inherited the Western concepts about life. Their countries were thus swamped by the materialistic Western culture and life in society came to be solely run according to the Western culture and its concepts.

Most of the Muslims did not realise that the democratic ruling system and the economic Capitalist system were both systems of disbelief. They were neither moved nor shocked when their disputes were settled by other than what Allah (swt) had revealed despite the fact that they most certainly knew that Allah (swt) says,

"Those who do not govern (judge) with what Allah has revealed, they are the disbelievers."  
[TMQ 5:44]

All this was because of the Western culture, based on the separation of religion from the state, which was predominant amongst their societies, and because the materialistic Western concepts were widespread. They felt that if they just believed in Allah (swt) and observed the prayers then they would have accomplished their Islamic duties. Meanwhile they thought that they could conduct their life's affairs according to their own desires and with what they thought was best. This did not trouble them in the slightest because they had been infected by the Western concept which states that one should, "Render unto Caesar what is Caesar's and unto God what is God's." Conversely, they were unaffected by the Islamic concepts which make Caesar and all he possesses firmly under the domain of Allah (swt). Allah's commands and prohibitions encompass all things as well as the prayer; they encompass buying and selling, renting (indeed all business transactions), the Judicial and education systems; simply everything, but the Muslims were no longer affected by these concepts. If only they had read what Allah (swt) says,

"And judge between them by what Allah has revealed. " [TMQ 5:49]

And His saying,

"When you deal with each other involving future obligations, in a fixed period of time reduce them to writing." [TMQ 2:282]

And His saying,

"And whoever contends with the Messenger after guidance has been plainly conveyed to him, and follows a path other than that of the Believers, We shall leave him in Hell, what an evil refuge." [TMQ 4:115]

And by Allah's saying,

"And it is not for the Believers to go forth (for jihad) together, If a contingent from every expedition go forth, (and a contingent remain) to devote themselves to studies in deen, and admonish their people when they return to them, so that they may guard themselves (against evil)." [TMQ 9:122]

Certainly they were never affected by the concepts carried in the verses contained in the Qur'an even if they read them. Instead they read these verses as Qur'anic verses stopping at that; whereas the Muslim really reads the Qur'an knowing that it is alive and that he should use the concepts in his life by attempting to implement them in it. They, however, read these verses in circumstances whereby Western concepts were predominant and accordingly they indulged in the spirituality of the verses. When it came to the concepts and the meanings of these verses they erected a mental block; all this was because the Western culture and concepts effectively controlled them, holding sway over them. This is as far as the majority of the people were concerned and those who held an Islamic or foreign education.

As for the politicians the tribulation was far greater and the catastrophe far worse due to them. Ever since the colonial powers had gathered these politicians, tempting them to stand against the 'Uthmani State by promises of big rewards, they conducted themselves according to what the Westerners had designed for them. In the days of the 'Uthmani State they sided with the Westerner and helped him against their State, this being expressly forbidden in Islam, yet still they somehow managed to do it and they felt proud of it. They boasted about their achievement during every occasion and anniversary which they chose for themselves to celebrate. At that time, instead of struggling against the ruling faction in order to redress the situation and shake up the State, they went along with its enemy, the disbelievers, against the State. The bitter irony was that the disbelievers eventually ended up swallowing their country. Then, instead of seeking the people's help against the disbelievers, they sought the help of the latter against their own people. They were affected by the disbelievers to the point whereby they lost their Islamic personality, their concepts became poisoned by certain political and philosophical opinions and this in turn poisoned their viewpoint about life and ultimately about jihad itself (this being the ultimate purpose of the State). This spread to poison the whole of the Islamic atmosphere and confuse the concepts in every aspect of life.

Negotiations replaced jihad; the politicians believed and adopted the principle of, 'Take, then demand' - which is considered better for the colonialist than a huge army in the land - and seeking the help of the disbelieving colonialist became common practice and a standard rule. They relied on him without realising that any assistance they sought from the disbeliever was considered a grave sin and political suicide. They also resorted to working through the narrowness of regionalism, and made it their own political atmosphere, not realising that this very regionalism makes political work fruitless because regionalism - no matter how large the region is - cannot fulfill all the political and non-political duties that a true life needs. They did not stop at that either, but they made their personal interests the focus of their attentions and gave the foreign countries their general centre of attention; therefore they lost the natural centre of attention, which was their ideology, and by losing it they lost the chance of

succeeding in their quest, no matter how hard they worked at it and however faithful they were. Therefore, all the political movements became futile, and every awakening in the Ummah turned into a contradictory, confused movement like that of the slaughtered animal, which finally ends with a motionless, despair and surrender. This is so, because the leaders of the political movements lost their natural focal attention, thus it became natural that the Ummah loses this focal attention. Accordingly, the concepts of the politicians were poisoned with the erroneous, as well as with the foreign ideologies. Thus movements were established in the Muslim lands in the name of Nationalism and Socialism, in the name of Regionalism and Communism, in the name of spiritual deen and the morals, and in the name of education and spiritual guidance. These movements worsened the situation and added to the complexes of which the society suffers. The result of all these movements was the failure and to revolve around themselves, because they went according to Western concepts, affected by the Missionary invasion; and they directed the Ummah in matters that brought no fruit or good. They also enabled imperialism to get strong hold and remain. Thus the success of the Missionary invasion was unmatched.

### **43. The Political Invasion Of The Islamic World**

The real cause behind the invasion of Andalus was the revenge which every Westerner yearned for ever since their humiliating defeat in the crusader wars. After the crushing blow they were dealt by the Muslims, and after they had been chased away from Muslim land, the Westerners carried a grudge against the Muslims, their hearts were filled with hatred and malice towards them. They would not dare repeat their venture in the East, for they knew that the Muslims would be able to repel any offensive there, they therefore thought that revenge would be easier to obtain in Andalus to the West. In time, Europe directed its onslaught to Andalus and savagely ripped it apart using guillotines and crematoriums on its inhabitants. It was more savage than the savage beasts, being one of the most shameful of many shameful acts carried out by the West; nevertheless they were encouraged by the slackness of the Muslims in supporting Andalus. The Muslims were strong enough at the time and in a position to assist that wilayah (province) militarily against its Western foes. However, the Muslims slackened and left Andalus an easy prey; this encouraged the West to think even further about revenge and had it not been for the might of the Muslims - especially the 'Uthmani State - the raids would have come thick and fast on the rest of the Muslim lands. It was the sheer might of the Muslims and the conquest of large parts of Europe by the invading 'Uthmanis which caused great fright among the Westerners and pressed them to think twice about embarking on any rash venture against the Muslims lest they get defeated in another bout of war like the style of the crusades. The Western invasion therefore had to be delayed until the second half of the eighteenth century, only then had stagnation hit the Islamic world. Thus, with the Muslims abandoning the conveyance of the Islamic message internationally and with the fervour of Islam having waned in their hearts and minds it was only then that their grandeur and might diminished in the eyes of their enemies. Following this the cultural and missionary invasions of the Islamic world intensified, this was accompanied by the political invasion aimed at dividing up the Muslim land bit by bit, tearing apart the Islamic world until finally it was destroyed. This was indeed accomplished and they achieved a most disastrous feat.

During the rule of Catherine (1762-1796) Russia fought the 'Uthmanis and defeated them, in the process a large area was sliced off their land. The Russians took the city of Azov and the al-Qaram Peninsula (the Crimea), as well as the whole of the Northern coast of the Black sea. They founded the city of Sevastopol as a military base in the Peninsula and built the commercial port of Odessa on the Black Sea in the South of the Ukraine. Russia became a major concern for the foreign policy of the 'Uthmani State by assuming sovereignty over the Roman emirates and considering herself the protector of Christianity within the 'Uthmani State. In 1884, Russia sliced from the Islamic State the whole of Turkistan, and then completed its occupation of the whole of Qafqas. However, Russia was not the only state to challenge the 'Uthmanis, the rest of the Western powers did so too. On the 1st July 1798, Napoleon attacked Egypt and quickly occupied her; in February 1799, he attacked the southern port of al-Sham and seized Gaza, al-Ramlah and Yafa; he stood near the fort of Akka (famous in the crusades as Acre), but his onslaught faltered and so he returned to Egypt, then to France and his venture finally failed in 1801. However, despite the fact that his campaign proved unsuccessful and abortive, it deeply affected the 'Uthmani State and shook it violently. In its aftermath most of the countries of Europe queued up to attack the Islamic world and occupy parts of its land. The French occupied Algeria in 1830, and worked towards occupying Tunisia until they did so in 1881; they occupied Marrakesh in 1912. The Italians occupied Tripoli in 1911 and this marked the separation of North Africa, which was

no longer under Islamic rule, from the 'Uthmani State. It came to be ruled by the disbelievers and was directly colonised by them.

The Westerners did not stop there but continued to complete and consolidate their occupation of the remaining parts of the State. Britain occupied Aden in 1839 and expanded its mandate to include the Lahaj and the other nine Protectorates which spread from the Southern Yemeni border to the East of the Peninsula. The British had long before seized India, therefore stripping the Muslims from their authority over it in the process. They specifically concentrated their oppression on the Muslims - the Muslims had been the people in authority in India - the British thus seized that authority and colonised India; then they began a process aimed at weakening the Muslim stand in general. In 1882, Britain seized Egypt and in 1898 Sudan; Holland meanwhile occupied the East Indies; Afghanistan was put under Anglo-Russian pressure and so was Iran. The Western onslaught on the Islamic world intensified until it was felt that it was about to fall under Western hegemony altogether and that the crusaders' campaign had been resumed and was achieving success after success. Steps were taken to resist this Western invasion and to minimise its heavy pressure. Resistance movements broke out in several places, a revolution erupted in Algeria, the Muslims of China rose up in arms, as did the Mahdiyyun in Sudan; the Sanusyya revolution also erupted. This actually proved that there was still some kind of vitality left within the Islamic world despite its decline and weakness, however, all these attempts failed completely and they never did manage to salvage the Islamic world. The West, in addition to its military invasion, set about dividing the Islamic world culturally and politically, then it went on to slice off parts of the Islamic world and worked tenaciously towards destroying the 'Uthmani State, for this was the Islamic State that represented the Muslims world-wide. With this purpose in mind the West established ethnic and nationalist groups; to begin with they incited the people of the Balkans to rebel, this took place back in 1804. Such rebellions as these were financed by the West and they eventually led in 1878 to the Balkans gaining their independence. The foreign powers also incited Greece to rebel in 1821 until this rebellion, thanks to their intervention, ended in Greece gaining its independence from the 'Uthmani State in 1830. It was at this stage then that the Balkans followed suit, until the shadow of the 'Uthmani State no longer engulfed Crete, Cyprus and most of the Mediterranean Islands which it had once governed over. Most of the inhabitants of these places were subsequently expelled from their homes and forced to flee due to the savagery of the disbelievers. They sought refuge in the Arab countries which were still Muslim land and remained part of the Islamic State; the Circassians, the Bushnaks, the Shashans and others are those heroes who refused to yield to the rule of the disbelievers and fled with their deen to the safety of the Islamic household and Islamic rule. The Westerners went even further and began - secretly - encouraging and supporting separatist movements among the Muslims themselves within the State, i.e. between Arabs and Turks. They backed the nationalist movements and helped to establish Turkish and Arab political parties such as the 'Turkyya al-Fatat Party', the 'Union and Progress Party', the 'Arab Independence Party', and the 'Covenant (Al-A'hd) Party' amongst others. This resulted in the State's body being violently shaken from within and it began to crumble, coupled with the foreign invasions. The unbelieving forces, represented by the West, found it very promising to direct their onslaught against the Islamic world, seizing the rest of its land and destroying the Islamic State by wiping it out of existence; this was at the start of the First World War which the 'Uthmani State was forced into and which ended in its defeat; the allies emerged as the victors and they divided the Islamic world between them as war booty. All that remained of the Islamic State was the Turkish land which became known as Turkey and which remained at the end of the war in 1918 at the mercy of the Western forces until 1921, when

she in turn managed to gain her independence from them after giving the allies guarantees that she would abandon the Islamic system of government.

#### **44. The Destruction Of The Islamic State**

In the wake of the First World War, after a truce had been declared between the warring factions and once the allies had secured their sweeping victory, the 'Uthmani State was destroyed and fragmented into small statelets. The allies seized all the Arab lands, Egypt, Syria, Palestine, Eastern Jordan and Iraq stripping them away from the State so that all that remained in the hands of the 'Uthmanis was Turkey, and even she had been invaded by the allies. English warships seized the Bosphorus and the British army occupied parts of the capital, Istanbul, all the Dardanelle fortresses and most of the strategic points throughout the whole of Turkey. The French meanwhile had also occupied parts of Istanbul and their Senegalese soldiers filled its streets. The Italian army occupied Bira and the railways, and the allied forces took over the running of the police, the national guard and the ports; they stripped all the fortresses of their weaponry and discharged part of the Turkish army. The 'Association of Union and Progress' was dissolved and both Jamal Pasha and Anwar Pasha fled the country; the rest of its members went under ground. A puppet government was then formed headed by Tawfeeq Pasha, to execute the orders of the occupying forces. The Khaleefah at the time was Waheed al-Deen, he forged the situation and deemed that he should deal with it in a wise manner; so he dissolved the parliament and assigned the Prime Minister's post to one of his most faithful friends, Farid Pasha, who backed him in his policy of maintaining cordial relations with the allies and in not resisting them lest they destroy the country, which it was more than especially vulnerable to, now that the war had ended. He executed his plan and the situation remained as such for a while with the allies dominating and Turkey in a state of lull. This continued on until 1919, when things began to change and the position of the allies weakened. A series of crises hit Italy, France and Britain at home, these were serious enough to threaten their internal stability, and soon differences too emerged between them. This was evident in Istanbul, where they fought over the booty, each of them wanting the lion's share of military positions and economic advantages. At this point Turkey was in a position to seize a last chance and save her existence. Now that a rift had occurred between the allies and their weaknesses were revealed, a point was reached whereby each one of them began inciting the Turks against the other, and in the process they gave the Turks assistance. The peace conference, which they had been planning, had not yet taken place and its conditions not laid down, therefore a glimmer of hope appeared on the horizon and people began to believe that they could organise a serious resistance movement. More than ten secret associations were established in Istanbul, their aim was to steal weapons and depots under the control of the enemy and send them to secret organisations within the country. Some officials were also involved in this work; Ismat a deputy in the War Ministry, Fawzi the Chief of Staff, Fathi the Interior Minister and Ra'uf Minister of the Navy were amongst those who helped these movements. Thus the task of secretly resisting the enemy was taken up by the many associations formed with that purpose in mind; the 'Association of Union and Progress' also became very active again. These movements were joined by some of the military until eventually they came to be unified under one movement headed by Mustapha Kamal. He established a movement to fight the allies and expel them from the country and he vowed to fight the Khaleefah's army if it stood in his way.

Mustapha Kamal's success in this quest was remarkable; having realised that central government and the authority in Istanbul were under the enemy's control he decided to establish a national government in Anadol. So he organised a national conference (rally) in Sywas, where the policies and the means to safeguard Turkey's Independence were discussed. The conference adopted few resolutions and an executive committee was formed, to be headed by Mustapha Kamal. The conference sent a warning to the Sultan demanding the

removal of the Prime Minister Farid and the holding of free parliamentary elections. Under such pressure, the Sultan was forced to submit to the conferences' demands, and so he dismissed the Prime Minister and appointed Ali Redha as his successor, then he ordered new elections to be held. The delegates from the conference entered the elections as a group with a manifesto designed to salvage the country and they achieved a sweeping majority in the new parliament.

After their success they moved on to Ankara and established their headquarters there where they held a meeting and proposed that the parliament should meet in Istanbul and their Council of Representatives should be dissolved since its members had now become official deputies. However Mustapha Kamal strongly opposed these two proposals saying, "The Council of Representatives should continue until the parliament's commitment and integrity is made clear and until its policy becomes known; as for the move to the capital, this would be sheer madness, for if you did this you would be under the mercy of the enemy. The British still control the country and the authorities will undoubtedly meddle in your affairs and perhaps arrest you. The parliament should therefore convene here in Ankara so that it remains independent." Mustapha Kamal persisted and defended his opinion strongly, but failed to persuade the deputies to hold the parliament's sessions in Ankara. The deputies duly went to the capital and expressed their loyalty to the Khaleefah then they continued on with their work; this was in January 1920.

The Sultan tried to impose his will on the deputies but they resisted and showed their willingness to hold on to the country's rights. When pressure from the allies mounted on them, they rallied public opinion for the mandate which they had agreed upon during the Sywas conference. The mandate included the conditions according to which they were prepared to accept peace; most important of these conditions was that Turkey should become a free and independent state within specified borders. The allies, especially the British, rejoiced, for this was exactly what they had been aiming at, moreover they wanted it to come from the Turks themselves. It is worth mentioning here that all the countries, which the 'Uthmani State used to rule over in her quality as an Islamic State, had each had, in the wake of the First World War, a mandate drawn up for them by the allies and which proclaimed for them the independence of the part which the allies wanted to keep separate. Iraq therefore had a mandate comprising the independence of Iraq, as did Syria, Palestine, Egypt and so on. Thus it was only natural for the allies, especially the British, to rejoice at this Turkish mandate for it was exactly what they wanted - the dismembering of the 'Uthmani State and its division into statelets lest it return again as one strong State. Their dream of destroying the Muslims' State looked as though it would now be fulfilled.

Had it not been for the mandates, which the allies managed to set up everywhere, the situation would have taken a different turn. The reason for this was because the 'Uthmani State was a single entity which considered all its wilayas a part of it, it had adopted a system of Unity and not Union and so there was no difference in the State's policy between Hijaz or Turkey, nor between the district of al-Quds and the district of Iskandarona - all of them were part of one single State. In addition to this the situation should have been further complicated by the conditions imposed on the defeated powers at the wars end. This was because the defeat of Turkey was similar to that of Germany, since they were allies in the war together, and the conditions of peace laid down on one country should have applied to the other. Thus if the people of Germany resisted the idea of having to part with as much as a hand span of their land, and fought against their country being dismembered, so should have been the case for the 'Uthmani State, and she too should never have been dismembered. The allies were aware of these realities and took them into account, however, when the 'Uthmanis themselves

requested their country to be dismembered, a request sought by Arabs and Turks alike, the allies leapt at the chance and ardently encouraged such moves - especially in the State's Central Office (Turkey) where most of the rule within the State originated and where it was represented.

The allies therefore considered the mandate to be their final victory. The Turks were thus allowed the freedom of resistance, once it had been published, and the allies then began to pull out their troops from every corner of the land. British and French troops were removed from the country, concomitantly the Turks began gathering strength. A resistance movement was formed which eventually turned into a revolution against the Sultan, thus forcing him to send in an army to crush the movement. This it managed to do until all the people stood by the Sultan except those in Ankara where the stronghold of the revolution was. Eventually Ankara itself was on the brink of defeat. In the face of the Khaleefah's army the surrounding villages fell one after the other and then joined it. Mustapha Kamal and those with him were placed in a very critical situation, but Mustapha Kamal was determined to fight on and so he incited the nationalists. They responded and gathered strength; rumours were spread in the Turkish provinces and villages that the British army was about to occupy the capital, arrest the nationalists and shut down the house of parliament by force. Rumours about the Sultan and his government supporting the occupation were also spread. The situation soon changed. People began deserting the Sultan and public opinion shifted towards the nationalists in Ankara. Men and women drifted towards Ankara volunteering to defend Turkey. Many soldiers deserted the Khaleefah's army and joined the army of Mustapha Kamal who by then had become a hero for the Turks and a symbol of their hopes. His position gathered strength and almost the whole of the country came under his control. He issued a leaflet calling for the election of a national Council of Representatives that would have Ankara as its headquarters. The election took place and the newly elected members convened calling themselves the Greater National Council of Representatives. They considered themselves the legitimate government, then they voted Mustapha Kamal as president of the Council of Representatives. Ankara became the centre of the national government and all the Turks approved of it. Mustapha Kamal then moved and destroyed what remained of the Khaleefah's army, putting an end to the civil war. He then concentrated in fighting the Greeks, and several bloody battles broke out. The Greeks had the upper hand at first but soon the balance shifted in Mustapha Kamal's favour. By August 1921, he launched a lightning and successful attack on the Greeks who at the time occupied Izmir and other parts of the Turkish coasts. In the beginning of September he sent for Ismat to meet Harrington and work out the details. At that meeting, the allies agreed to expel the Greeks from Tarees and to withdraw themselves from Istanbul and the whole of Turkey. If we closely followed Mustapha Kamal's moves, we deduce that the allies agreed to his demands only when they secured a promise that he would destroy the Islamic rule in return. This was made clearer when the national Council of Representatives discussed with him the future of Turkey in the wake of the victories he had achieved, he replied, "I do not believe in a league of Islamic countries, nor in a league of the 'Uthmani peoples, and each one of us is free to embrace any opinion he wishes. However, the government should adhere to a fixed and devised policy based on realities, a policy that carries one single objective, that is to protect the country and its independence within its natural borders. The sentiments, and the illusions should not affect our policy, and damn to the dreams and the myths, they have in the past cost us dearly."

He by this declared that he wanted the independence of Turkey on the basis of being a country for the Turkish people not the Islamic Ummah. Some of the deputies and the politicians asked him about how the government of the new Turkey should be shaped, for it would be inconceivable for her to have two governments as was the case at that time; a

transitional government with the power behind it and Ankara as its headquarters, and an official government (in name) in the capital headed by the Sultan and his ministers. The politicians insisted upon him that he should manifest his opinion about this issue, he did not answer them and hid his intentions. Instead he began to incite public opinion against the Khaleefah, Waheed al-Deen, accusing him of collaborating with the British and the Greeks. People were enraged against the Khaleefah and amidst the public euphoria behind him, Mustapha Kamal called for a meeting of the national Council of Representatives to outline his plan regarding the Sultan and the government. He had known all along that he was capable of convincing the deputies to remove Waheed al-Deen and dissolve the Sultanate, but he could not be so daring as to risk a direct attack on the Khilafah, since this would have triggered the peoples Islamic sentiment and feelings. He did not therefore dissolve the Khilafah and avoided tackling the issue head on, instead he slyly suggested separating the Sultanate from the Khilafah, thus the Sultanate could be dissolved and Waheed al-Deen removed. As soon as the deputies heard this they became speechless, they quickly realised the dangerous implications of the proposal which they had been asked to endorse and they moved to first debate the issue at hand. Mustapha Kamal was exceedingly apprehensive and fearful of such a debate, so he asked instead for a motion (vote) regarding the proposal to take place. He received the backing of eighty of the deputies, they were from among his personal supporters, however the Council of Representatives refused to grant him his wish and alternatively referred the proposal to the legal committee to look into. When the committee convened the next day, Mustapha Kamal attended and watched the course of events closely. The committee, comprising of scholars and lawyers, debated the issue for a few hours and soon realised that the proposal violated the Shari'ah texts, since in Islam there is nothing called religious authority and temporal authority - 'Saltana' and Khilafah - are one and the same. The concept of separating the deen from the State does not exist in Islam and had never existed throughout its history, there was an Islamic System and the State was part of the System, indeed it was the State that implemented the System. Inevitably the legal committee could not find any justification for such a separation nor could it find a reason for conducting a debate on the issue because the Islamic texts are clear-cut and decisive (not open to interpretation) about this issue. Unsurprisingly, the committee rejected the proposal. However, Mustapha Kamal was determined to separate the deen from the State by separating the Sultanate from the Khilafah, which was the fulfilment of the aims of the allies - the destruction of the remains of the Islamic State by the hands of its own people. His colonialist culture, which makes him imitate the Westerners in their separation of the temporal power from the spiritual one drove him to separate the Saltana from the Khilafah, just as the Church had come to be separated from the state in the West. When Mustapha Kamal realised that the debate of the committee was taking a course different to his, he lost his temper and leapt off his seat, he stood on a chair fuming with rage and interrupted the debate of the committee by shouting, "Your excellencies! The 'Uthmani Sultan has seized the authority of the people by force, and it is by force that the people have decided to regain it. The Sultanate must be separated from the Khilafah and dissolved, this shall take place whether you agree or not, all there is to it is that some of your heads will fall in the process." He spoke like a dictator, then the meeting of the committee broke up. The national Council of Representatives was immediately called for so as to meet to discuss the proposal.

Throughout the debate, Mustapha Kamal realised that the majority of the deputies were against the proposal, so he gathered his supporters around him and called for a vote on the proposal by raising hands once. The deputies objected to this and said, "If it is absolutely necessary to vote, let this take place by calling out the name of each deputy." Mustapha Kamal rejected this and shouted out menacingly, "I am confident that the Council of

Representatives will endorse the proposal by general consensus and it will be sufficient to take votes by raising hands only." The proposal was put to the vote and only a few hands were raised, however the result was declared as though the Council of Representatives had accepted the proposal by a clear majority. The deputies were stunned by this and some of them leapt from their seats protesting and shouting, "This is not true, we did not agree!" So the supporters of Mustapha Kamal shouted back at them and restrained them, insults were exchanged then the President of the Council of Representatives declared the result of the vote once more stating that the Council of Representatives had approved by a clear majority the dissolution of the Sultanate. Then the meeting broke up. Mustapha Kamal left the conference centre surrounded by his supporters. When Waheed al-Deen, the Khaleefah, received news of this he fled the country and soon after his nephew, Abdul Majid, was nominated as the Khaleefah of the Muslims, albeit stripped of any authority. The country, however, remained without a lawful ruler.

If the Sultanate was separated from the Khilafah, who then was the legal ruler? Mustapha Kamal had all along been very anxious to separate the Sultanate from the Khilafah, and he did so without revealing the structure of government which Turkey was to adopt. With the dissolution of the Sultanate it had become necessary to decide the format of the new government; would Mustapha Kamal form the government and become the President of a constitutional state whilst keeping the Khaleefah as the authoritative figure? If so then would not the decision to dissolve the Sultanate have been ineffectual in the first place?

Mustapha Kamal refused to form a government and did not reveal his intentions. Backed up by his power and authority, through which he had control over the people, he went on to form a party which he called the 'People's Party'. His intention was to gain the public opinion in his favour, because, despite his power, the sweeping majority in the Council of Representatives were still against him even after the declaration of the separation of the Sultanate from the Khilafah. This led him to consider disclosing the shape of the new government which he had decided to form - declaring Turkey to be a republic with himself as its President. He started by initiating a smear campaign against the Council of Representatives and this produced an embarrassing political crisis, thus leading to the resignation of the government in office. The government tendered its resignation to the national Council of Representatives creating a power vacuum. Amidst the deepening crisis, some of the deputies suggested to the Council of Representatives that it should appoint Mustapha Kamal as the head of the government in order to solve the crisis. At first he pretended that he held no ambitions for the job, then he agreed and went up to the stand to address the Council of Representatives. In his speech he said to the deputies, "You have sent for me to come to the rescue at this critical hour, however, the critical situation is of your own doing, therefore this state of affairs is not a passing incident, but a fundamental error of judgment in the system of our government. The national Council of Representatives has at the moment two functions, legislative and executive, each deputy wants to take part in every ministerial decision and stick his nose into every government department and every decision made by a minister. Your excellencies, no minister can become familiar with his job and responsibility, and accept a post in such circumstances. You have to realise that a government founded on this basis is impossible to establish; and if it were established, you would not call it a government, but a shambles; and we have to appreciate this state of affairs. Therefore, I have decided to turn Turkey into a republic, with an elected President." Once he had finished his speech it was soon realised that he had already prepared a decree, making Turkey a republic and electing Mustapha Kamal as the first President of the Turkish republic; he therefore turned himself into the lawful ruler of the country.

However, things did not run as smoothly for Mustapha Kamal as he had wished, for one thing, the Turkish people are Muslim and what Mustapha Kamal did contradicts Islam. A feeling that Mustapha Kamal intended to destroy Islam spread, this feeling was fuelled by Kamal's own personal actions; in his private life he held Islam in contempt, violating all the Divine Shari'ah rules, mocking everything that Muslims hold in high esteem and sanctity. People soon realised that the new rulers of Ankara were disbelieving devils and they began to gather around the Khaleefah Abdul Majid. They attempted to hand him back the authority and make him the effective ruler so that he could get rid of these apostates. Mustapha Kamal sensed the growing danger and realised that the majority of the people despised him, accusing him of being a zindiq, disbeliever and a heretic. He thought long and hard about the matter and as a result intensified his smear campaign against the Khaleefah and the Khilafah, inciting the fervour of the national Council of Representatives, until it adopted and enacted a law stating that any opposition to the republic and any siding with the Sultan would be considered an act of treachery which carried the death penalty. Mustapha Kamal then began to talk about the disadvantages of the Khilafah at every meeting, especially the general Council of Representatives. He started to prepare the ground to abolish the Khilafah. Some of the deputies countered this threat by speaking out about the diplomatic advantages of the Khilafah, they were met in turn by a fierce attack from Mustapha Kamal. He said to the national Council of Representatives, "Was it not because of the Khilafah, Islam and the religious men, that the Turkish villagers fought and died for five centuries? It is high time Turkey looked after her own interests and ignored the Indians and the Arabs; Turkey should rid itself of leading the Muslims."

Mustapha Kamal pursued his smear campaign against the Khilafah, highlighting its disadvantages to the Turkish people, he also smeared the Khaleefah himself by portraying him and his supporters as the real traitors and as British puppets. Mustapha Kamal did not stop there but went on to sponsor a terror campaign against those who championed the Khilafah. His reaction towards one of the deputies who openly declared the obligation of holding onto the Khilafah and safeguarding the deen was to hire someone to kill him the very night that he was meant to speak. So one of his followers assassinated him that night whilst he was on his way back home from the national Council of Representatives. Another deputy delivered an Islamic speech, so Mustapha Kamal summoned him and threatened him with hanging if he opened his mouth again. Mustapha Kamal spread terror everywhere. In time he ordered the Governor of Istanbul to scale down the protocol and ceremonial display that surrounds the Khaleefah's cortege during the Friday prayers. He also cut down the Khaleefah's salary to the minimum and exhorted his followers to desert him. When some of Mustapha Kamal's moderate supporters witnessed this, their Islamic feelings began to run high again and they feared the annulment of the Khilafah. They proposed to Mustapha Kamal the idea of appointing himself as Khaleefah over the Muslims. He flatly refused. Then he was visited by two delegations, one from Egypt and the other from India, they asked him to appoint himself as Khaleefah of the Muslims, they pleaded with him repeatedly but to no avail. Mustapha Kamal had by now prepared the way to deal his final blow and destroy the Khilafah.

Hatred and contempt for foreigners, the enemy and their supposed ally the Khaleefah was spread by him amongst the people, the armed forces and the national Council of Representatives. Inciting the feeling of hatred towards foreigners was merely a ploy intended to accuse the Khaleefah of being their ally. When public opinion had shifted towards him and with feelings against the Khaleefah running high, Mustapha Kamal presented to the national Council of Representatives on March 3rd 1924 a motion stating the annulment of the Khilafah and the removal and expulsion of the Khaleefah, thereby formally separating the

deen from the State. Some of the words which he said when he presented the motion to the deputies were as follows, "At what cost should the threatened republic be safeguarded and be established on a strong scientific basis? The Khaleefah and the legacies of 'Aal Uthman' must go, the ancient religious courts and their laws must be replaced by modern courts and modern laws, the schools of the clergy must give way to secular government schools." He then went on to attack the deen and what he called religious men. Displaying real dictatorial authority, he adopted the motion himself and secured the national Council of Representatives' approval without any debate taking place, then he sent an order to the Governor of Istanbul stating that the Khaleefah, Abdul Majid, should leave Turkey before dawn the following day. The Governor himself, went with a group of policemen and soldiers to the Khaleefah's Palace at midnight. They forced him to get into a cart and escorted him to the border not allowing him to take more than one suitcase containing some clothing and a little money.

This is how Mustapha Kamal abolished the Islamic State and the Islamic System, and in its place established a Capitalist state and a Capitalist system. By destroying the Islamic State, he fulfilled the dream of the disbelievers which they had nurtured ever since the Crusades.

## **45. Preventing Re-Establishment Of The Islamic State**

In the wake of the First World War, the allies occupied all the lands of the Islamic State. Their main aim was to destroy the State for good and then ensure that it would never rise again. Once they had destroyed the Islamic State, they set about making sure that the Islamic State could not be re-established in any part of its lands. They designed several plans and used several methods to make certain that the Islamic State would never return to existence, and they are still working towards that objective.

Following a carefully designed plan, the disbelieving colonial powers set about strengthening their grip on the Muslim lands, from the very first day that they occupied the Islamic world. In 1918, they occupied the countries which were still under the rule of the 'Uthmani State and established military rule within them until 1922. They concentrated their stranglehold over them through mandatory rule or self autonomy, then came 1924. In that year, many steps were taken by the enemy, especially Britain, in order to quell any moves - whether directly or indirectly - aimed at reviving the Islamic State. In that year, Mustapha Kamal abolished the Khilafah System in the 'Uthmani State due to direct pressure from the colonial disbelievers and turned Turkey into a 'democratic' republic. He thus destroyed the spectre of the Khilafah and with it the last vestige of hope for the Islamic State to stage a comeback. In that year, al-Hussein ibn 'Ali was expelled from Hijaz and imprisoned in Cyprus as he had an eye on the Khilafah; in that very year the British, through their collaborators, intervened to make sure that the Khilafah conference held in Cairo was called off and doomed to failure; and again in that same year, the British worked hard to dissolve the Khilafah associations established in India, making sure that the movements' ambitions were aborted and its tendency was transformed into a nationalist and sectarian one. Still in the same year, and following pressure from the colonial disbelievers, literature written by some of al-Azhar's scholars calling for the separation of the deen from the State, claiming that Islam does not contain any fundamentals for government or ruling, and portraying Islam as a priestly (Kahanuty) religion with no basics or teachings about ruling and the State, was published. Yet again in that same year and the following one, some Byzantine sponsored debates and arguments over two topics took centre stage in the Arab countries: Which of the two leagues would be better, the Arab league or the Islamic league? Newspapers and magazines focused their attention on this issue, despite the fact that both leagues had a damaging effect and that their very existence presented an obstacle in the face of any attempt to re-establish the Islamic State. Nevertheless the colonial disbelievers managed to bring about this debate in order to direct attention away from the real issue, which was the Islamic State. These moves, therefore, managed to distance the people's minds in the Muslim lands away from the concept of the Khilafah and the Islamic State.

Prior to their occupation the colonial powers began spreading nationalistic slogans amongst the Turkish youth by claiming that Turkey had been burdened with the running of the affairs of non-Turkish people and that it was high time she left those people to their own fate. Political parties also worked towards spreading Turkish nationalism and called for Turkey's independence from the non-Turkish countries. The disbelievers spread the same concepts among Arab youths and encouraged Arab nationalism. They described Turkey as being an occupying force and called on the Arabs to rid themselves of being occupied by the Turks, and likewise political parties calling for Arab unity and Arab independence were formed; they soon filled the vacuum which was once filled by Islamic concepts. Consequently, the Turks gained their independence on the basis of nationalism, and the Arabs began working towards

achieving autonomy on a nationalist geographic basis. The concepts of nationalism and patriotism spread rapidly throughout the nation, and the Muslims prided themselves on these concepts. The colonial forces did not stop at that, but went still further by spreading erroneous concepts about the Islamic ruling system and Islam, portraying the Khilafah as being a papal and priestly rule. This reached the point whereby the Muslims were embarrassed to mention the word Khaleefah, or to proclaim the concept of the Khilafah. At this time there arose a popular conception amongst the Muslims, this was that any proclamation of the word Khilafah was backward and had a type of rigidity, it should not be uttered by any educated person nor should any intellectual talk about it.

It was amidst this highly nationalistic and patriotic feeling, which had gathered momentum within society, that the disbelievers dismembered the Islamic State, parcelling it up into little statelets, and encouraging the local communities to strengthen these divisions. The 'Uthmani State was divided into several states, these being: Turkey, Egypt, Iraq, Syria, Lebanon, Palestine, East Jordan, Hijaz, Najd and Yemen. Politicians in these statelets, both the collaborators and those with good intentions, began to hold conferences in every country, demanding their independence, i.e. independence for the country that the disbelievers had founded to the exclusion of the other statelets. On this basis the State of Turkey was founded, as were the states of Iraq, Egypt, Syria etc.. Then a national homeland for the Jews was founded in Palestine, which was then subsequently turned into an independent entity. It was used by the disbelievers as a bridgehead and to draw the attention of the Muslims away from the colonial disbelievers, i.e. the Western countries such as Britain, the United States and France, and to form of it one of the obstacles which stand in the way of the return of the Islamic State. This geographical situation and the general scene were both designed to make sure that the Muslims would never be able to liberate themselves.

The disbelievers set about implementing the Capitalist system in Economics and the Democratic system in the Government. They also introduced Western laws in their Administrative and Judicial systems. They spread their culture and their concepts about life, and earnestly attempted to establish their view point about life so that their way of life became the one that the Muslims adopted and followed. They have in fact succeeded in this quest. They turned Egypt into a Sultanate, then a parliamentary monarchy was established; in Iraq a parliamentary monarchy system was established; Syria and Lebanon became republics and in East Jordan an emirate was established; while Palestine was put under mandatory rule which ended in the establishment of a parliamentary democratic system for the Jews. The remainder of Palestine was joined to East Jordan and turned into a parliamentary monarchy; in Hijaz and in Yemen dictatorial monarchies were established, and in Turkey a presidential republic was formed; while in Afghanistan a hereditary monarchy was established. The colonial disbelievers encouraged Iran to maintain the Imperial system while India remained a colony, until eventually it was divided into two states. The colonial disbelievers therefore managed to impose their system on Muslim land, and by so doing the concept of re-establishing the Islamic rule gradually waned in people's minds. Furthermore, each local community was encouraged to hold on to the system that the disbelievers had established for it and they worked towards achieving total independence from all the other countries of the Muslim world; thus an Iraqi became a foreigner in Egypt. The rulers of each statelet became more keen to safeguard the Capitalist democratic system than the founders of the system itself. They became surrogates, watching over and guarding the system and constitution that the colonial powers had set up for them.

The colonial disbelieving powers set to work implementing Western laws directly on Muslim land, previously they had attempted to implement them through their collaborators in the

Muslim countries. The disbelievers initiated their attempts to introduce Western laws in the first half of the 19th century. They began encouraging people in Egypt to adopt French civil laws so as to replace the Shari'ah, they succeeded in doing so and Egypt began implementing the French Judicial system in 1883. The old French Judicial system was translated and enacted, it became the newly adopted system in Egypt replacing the Shari'ah in the law courts. A similar move began within the 'Uthmani State in 1856 with the aim of introducing Western laws there, however, this move was not as easy as in Egypt because the Khilafah itself was based in the 'Uthmani State. However, due to the disbelievers' persistence, and the response of their collaborators, they succeeded in introducing the French penal code and new non-Islamic legal and commercial laws by securing fatawa which stated that these did not contradict Islam. The concept of legislation then took root and with that the Journal of Shari'ah laws fabricated a law splitting the tribunals (courts) into two; a Shari'ah court, using Shari'ah rules; and a civil court, using Western laws - some scholars had issued fatawa stating that these did not contradict Islam and as well some Shari'ah laws, that had been shaped in imitation of Western laws, were formulated and used. This was concerning the law. As for the constitution, moves aimed at drafting a new constitution for the State, using the French constitution as its source, were made in conjunction with the movement for new legislation. These moves nearly succeeded in 1878 except for the fierce resistance of the Muslims who stood up to them and stopped them in their tracks. However, the colonial disbelievers' persistence, coupled with the success of their collaborators and those who were seduced by their culture, enabled the movement for the drafting of a constitution to emerge once more and this time succeeded in its task. The constitution was put into practice in 1908; with its adoption and the implementation of the new legislation, all the Muslims lands, with the exception of the Arabian Peninsula and Afghanistan, came to be directly governed by Western laws. Thus the Shari'ah laws were abandoned and this meant that Kufr rule was enforced and the rule of Islam discarded.

What helped the rule of Kufr to strengthen its grip over the Muslims was the fact that the colonialists had based their strategy on the education policy, which they had designed, and the educational programmes adopted and implemented by them. These are still in force today throughout all the countries of the Muslim world, and as a result we have a huge army of teachers, most of whom ensure the safety of these educational programmes. So many of them take up influential posts, thus carrying out and perpetuating the wishes of the disbelievers. The education policy was founded on two principles; the first principle was to separate the deen from temporal life, which would naturally lead to the separation of the deen from the State. This measure was also designed to ensure that the young Muslims would fight off the re-establishment of the Islamic State because the Islamic State would contradict the basis upon which they had been educated. The second principle was to make the personality of the colonial disbeliever the main source of emulation for the young Muslims. This would then readily facilitate their minds to be filled with his culture and information. Such a move entailed giving respect to the Kafir, it entailed glorifying him, attempting to emulate him and befriending him, despite the fact that he was a colonial disbeliever. It also entailed holding the Muslim in contempt and disdain so that he was kept away from him. The feelings of disgust displayed towards him thus prevented anyone taking or learning anything from him and naturally compelled them to fight the re-establishment of the Islamic State, for it would be considered a reactionary State.

The colonialists felt that the school syllabus, which they had designed, and which they, together with their agents whom they employed, closely monitored, was not enough. So they established besides them missionary schools based on their colonialist principles. In addition, cultural centres, that had as their task the spreading of misguided political orientations, were

also established. Consequently, the intellectual situation in these various schools and cultural colleges led to the Ummah being fed the kind of culture that led her away from thinking about re-establishing the Islamic State and prevented her from working towards that cause.

Besides all this, the new political programmes which were adopted were all based on the principle of separating the deen from temporal life. This concept became widespread amongst the intellectuals and they became resigned to the fact that the deen should be separated from the State. For the rest of the people, though, it was manifested as a separation of the deen from politics. As a result, some of the intellectuals claimed that the cause behind the decline of the Muslims was their attachment to the deen and they claimed that the only path to their revival would be through nationalism. They therefore started to work towards it. Others claimed that the cause behind the Muslims' decline was the absence of morals. On the first count, political parties (in name only) were established calling and working for nationalism and claiming that work on an Islamic basis would merely be a colonialist ploy, that it would be reactionary and rigid to think on this basis and that this would lead to them lagging behind and to their decline. On the second count, several groups were formed on the basis of morals, preaching and spiritual guidance. These began to work towards moral excellence, undertaking not to get involved in politics. It was, in matter of fact, the presence of these parties and organisations that proved to be the effective obstacle barring the way to the efforts made to re-establish the Islamic State. This was because the associations that sprang up all over the Islamic world distracted the minds of the Muslims, and they themselves turned away from politics, which is a legal duty upon them for re-establishing the Islamic State, to preaching the morals only, which would have been the inevitable outcome of the implementation of the rules of Islam, and a natural outcome of the return of Islamic rule. In addition, these parties were also established on a colonialist basis that contradicts Islam, and because of this they inadvertently prevented the re-establishment of the Islamic State.

Alongside the newly adopted political programmes new laws were drafted to safeguard them and ensure their execution. Some laws were enacted to bar the establishment of Islamic political parties and movements, these considered the Muslims to be no more than a sect among other sects, though they were the legitimate citizens of the land. These laws included certain clauses which imposed a democratic system on the political parties and movements, and specified that they should not restrict their membership to any particular sect; this meant that it became against the law to establish any Islamic groups or parties in Muslim countries lest the Islamic State should be re-born. Muslims had no right to establish any party or movement except charity organisations or other similar organisations. They were restricted from indulging in political work on the basis of Islam; some of the laws that were introduced considered establishing Islamic political parties a serious crime that deserved punishment. The political programmes propagated in the Muslim world, with the help of the adopted laws, were therefore focused on preventing the re-establishment of the Islamic State.

The colonialists did not stop there but went on to occupy the Muslims with trivial matters with the aim of distracting them from thinking about the Islamic State, so they encouraged Islamic conferences which served as a diversion from the real work, i.e. the Islamic call and the resumption of the Islamic way of life under the umbrella of the Islamic State. Such conferences as these served as an effective way for the Muslims to rid themselves of their frustrations. Decisions would be made at these conferences, and were published in the newspapers, announced from the radio stations but were never executed.

Writers and lecturers were also encouraged to highlight the threat that the Islamic State posed. They promoted the concept that Islam does not contain a ruling system. Books and essays, written by some hired Muslims, were published carrying these colonialist concepts in order to

lead the Muslims astray, divert them from their deen and away from working towards the resumption of the Islamic way of life according to the rules of that deen.

Since destroying the Islamic State the colonialists have persevered in their bid to place obstacles in the way of the re-establishment of the Islamic State. They have concentrated their efforts to prevent its founding again after first having abolished it from the face of the earth.

## 46. Establishing The Islamic State Is A Duty Upon All Muslims

The structure of the Islamic State is based on seven pillars which are the Khaleefah, the Assistants, the Walis, the Judges, the Administrative system, the Armed Forces and the Council of Ummah. The structure of the State would be complete if these seven elements were in place; if any of these elements were absent the structure would be incomplete, though the State would still remain Islamic, and any defect or shortage would not upset its status as long as the Khaleefah remained viable, since it is he who is the foundation of the State. As for the principles of the ruling system in the Islamic State, there are four:

1. The appointment of one Khaleefah.
2. The authority belongs to the Ummah.
3. The sovereignty belongs to the Shari'ah.
4. The Khaleefah alone reserves the right to adopt the Shari'ah rules, i.e. to enact them as laws.

If any of these principles were to be missing, the ruling system would become non-Islamic, therefore these four principles must be enforced. The basis of the Islamic State is the Khaleefah and anyone other than him is a deputy to him or an advisor for him; the Islamic State is a Khaleefah implementing Islam and the office of Khilafah or Imamah is to have full disposal over the affairs of the Muslims. It is not part of the doctrines ('aqaid) of Islam, but part of the Shari'ah rules because it is part of the branches related to the humans' actions.

The appointment of the Khaleefah is an obligation upon the Muslims, they are forbidden from spending more than two nights without giving a bay'ah to him. If the Muslims did not appoint a Khaleefah within three days they would all be sinful until they had appointed a Khaleefah. The sin would not fall until they had exhausted all their efforts to appoint a Khaleefah and continued to endeavour to appoint him. The obligation of appointing a Khaleefah has been confirmed by the Sunnah and the general consensus of the Sahabah. As for the Sunnah, the Messenger of Allah (saw) said, "He who died not knowing the Imam of his time has died a death of jahiliyyah (days of ignorance)." Ahmed and al-Tabarani extracted from the hadith of Mu'awiyah the following: The Messenger of Allah (saw) said, "Whoso dies while there was no bay'ah on his neck dies a death of jahiliyyah." Muslim reported in his Sahih on the authority of Ibn 'Umar that he said, I heard the Messenger of Allah (saw) say, "Whoso takes off his hand from allegiance to Allah will meet Him on the Day of Resurrection without having any proof for him, and whoso dies while there was no bay'ah on his neck dies a death of jahiliyyah." Hisham reported on the authority of 'Urwa, who reported on the authority of Abu Salih, who reported on the authority of Abu Hurayrah that the Messenger of Allah (saw) said, "Leaders will take charge of you after me, where the pious one will lead with his piety and the impious with his impiety, so listen to them and obey them in everything which conforms with the truth. If they acted rightly it is to your credit, and if they acted wrongly it is counted for you and against them." As for the Ijma' of the Sahabah, they made the appointment of a Khaleefah their top priority in the wake of the departure of the Messenger of Allah (saw); this is according to that which has been narrated in the two Sahihis about the events in the hall of Banu Sa'idah and also in the wake of the death of each subsequent Khaleefah. The general consensus of the Sahabah concerning the obligation of appointing a Khaleefah has been transmitted by way of khabar mutawatir (continuous report), the Sahabah agreed that it was the most important of all obligations. This is considered to be a conclusive evidence. It has also been confirmed by means of tawatur that the Ummah should at no time

remain without a Khaleefah. It is obligatory on the whole Ummah to appoint a Khaleefah, i.e. to establish him in office to govern her affairs. The command is addressed to the entire Ummah; this took effect from the moment of his (saw) departure and will continue to the Day of Judgment.

The extent of the inevitable obligation to establish the Khaleefah and the extent of awareness about this obligation among the Sahabah, is clearly reflected in the actions which they performed at the time. They delayed the burial of the Messenger of Allah (saw) until a Khaleefah had been given the bay'ah to head the State. It is also reflected clearly in the action of 'Umar ibn al-Khattab - in the wake of his stabbing whilst the agony of death neared - when the Muslims asked him to nominate a successor. At first he refused, when they persisted he nominated six candidates from which a Khaleefah was to be elected. He also set a deadline of three days for the six to reach an agreement. He gave instructions stating that in the case of the six not coming to an agreement within the three days, the one who opposed the decision should be killed. Indeed he ordered the killing of the one who sat in opposition despite the fact that the six were all people of Shura and senior Sahabah. The six were in fact 'Ali, 'Uthman, 'Abd al-Rahman ibn 'Auf, al-Zubayr ibn al-'Awwam, Talhah ibn 'Ubaydullah and Sa'd ibn Abi Waqqas. That one of these Sahabah could have been killed, should they have been unable to reach an agreement concerning the election of a Khaleefah, serves as a clear evidence that the appointment of a Khaleefah is compulsory.

Besides, numerous Shari'ah duties depend on the presence of the Khaleefah; such as the implementation of rules, the execution of the penal code, guarding the frontiers, training and equipping the Armed Forces, settling disputes and keeping law and order, in addition to looking after other matters and transactions which take place between individuals. Thus the appointment of a Khaleefah is compulsory.

Seeking the post of Khaleefah and competing for it is not undesirable, the Sahabah competed for the post in the saqee'ah and the people of shura also competed for the office. Nobody condemned or disowned this action, on the contrary, the general consensus of the Sahabah regarding the competition for the post of Khaleefah, is clearly established, confirming that it is lawful and acceptable.

Muslims are forbidden from appointing more than one Khaleefah; Muslim reported on the authority of Abu Sa'id al-Khudry that the Messenger of Allah (saw) said, "If a bay'ah has been taken for two Khulafa', kill the latter of them." In another hadith, he (saw) is reported to have said, "Whoso pledged allegiance to an Imam giving him the clasp of his hand and the fruit of his heart shall obey him as long as he can, and if another comes to dispute with him you must strike the neck of that man." In another narration, the wording was as follows, "...strike him with the sword whoever he may be." The command to kill the other one would come into effect if he did not comply and retreat. If a group of people, who met all the requirements necessary for the post of Khilafah, were given the bay'ah then it would be the one with the majority of votes who would become Khaleefah - whoever opposed the majority would subsequently be considered a rebel. This would apply if the nominees were gathered together in person, but if the Khilafah had been contracted to one man who fulfilled the requirements of the Khilafah and the majority of the Muslims gave their bay'ah to another, then the first man should become Khaleefah and the second man should be turned down.

The requirements for the Khilafah office are Islam, manhood, maturity, sanity and justice, i.e. the candidate should be Muslim, male, mature, sane and just. As for the condition of being a Muslim, this follows because of Allah's saying,

"Allah will not allow the Disbelievers to have a way (an authority) over the Believers " [TMQ 4:141]

As for the condition that the Khaleefah must be a man, it is derived from the hadith of the Messenger of Allah (saw) when he said, "How could a folk be successful if they are headed by a woman?" The conditions of maturity and sanity must be met because the insane and the minor need tutors and guardians to look after their welfare, therefore if one cannot rule one's own affairs, evidently he is unable to run other people's. As for justice, this must be fulfilled because the duty of the Khaleefah is to implement the rules of the deen, and if he could not implement them upon himself then he could not be trusted to implement them upon others - for one cannot give what one does not possess. Justice has been made a condition which the Khaleefah must fulfill because if he were fasiq then he would be unfit for the Khilafah and he could not remain in office. Trustworthy is a condition laid down in the contract and it must be observed throughout. These are the set conditions for the post of Khaleefah, as for the other conditions which the scholars have mentioned, such as bravery, knowledge and belonging to Quraysh or a descendant of Fatima among others, these are not necessary conditions for the contracting of the Khilafah and none of the evidences put forward to back such claims have proven to be reliable and therefore cannot be considered as conditions. Every male Muslim who is mature, sane, trustworthy, free and able is fit to be given the bay'ah by the other Muslims in order to become their Khaleefah and no other conditions are needed nor should be laid down.

Re-establishing the Islamic State, therefore, is a duty upon all the Muslims because this has been confirmed by the Sunnah and the general consensus of the Sahabah. Because the Muslims have submitted to the influence of Kufr over their land and the rules of Kufr are implemented on them, their homeland, which in the past had been an Islamic homeland, has become a Kufr homeland; in other words their citizenship has become non-Islamic even though their land is Islamic. It is obligatory upon them to live in an Islamic homeland and to have an Islamic citizenship, yet they cannot achieve this unless they establish an Islamic State. Thus the Muslims would remain sinful until they began to work towards re-establishing the Islamic State so that they could give their bay'ah to a Khaleefah who would implement Islam and carry its Message to the world.

## **47. Difficulties Facing The Re-Establishment Of The Islamic State**

Re-establishing the Islamic State is by no means an easy or straightforward task, because resuming the Islamic way of life is not a simple matter. There are several colossal obstacles facing the re-establishment of the Islamic State which need first to be removed and dismantled, and there are several major difficulties standing in the way of the resumption of the Islamic way of life which also need to be overcome. This is so because the issue is not merely the existence of just any state, nor the founding of a state simply calling itself Islamic; the issue is in fact the existence of an Islamic State which implements Islam as a system emanating from the Islamic 'aqeedah, a State which implements Islam according to the Shari'ah rules, since these are the rules of Allah (swt). Thus the Islamic way of life would initially be resumed at home and then the Islamic Message would come to be conveyed to all the peoples abroad.

This Islamic State should be founded on the Islamic emotions, fashioned by the Islamic 'aqeedah and what emanates from the Islamic concepts and rules, and on the Islamic mentality, nurtured by the Islamic thought and rationally shaped by the Islamic ideology and method, so that it would exist first and foremost with the Islamic personality as its foundation, as well as the rules and systems which emanate from the Islamic 'aqeedah, so that the incentives of this life originate from the inner soul producing therefore the Islamic mentality and the Islamic disposition and temperament which would ensure the voluntary implementation of the systems and rules with passion, zeal and peace of mind equally within both the ruler and the subjects.

This State must be Islamic both at the level of the Ummah and that of the people in authority, who undertake the running of the Ummah's affairs. It must be Islamic in all aspects of its life, securing the resumption of the Islamic way of life in a manner which would enable her to carry its Message to the whole world; this in turn would enable the non-Muslims to witness the light of Islam from within its State so that they enter the deen of Allah (swt) in flocks.

This is why the difficulties, which stand in the way of resuming the Islamic way of life, or stand in the path of the re-establishment of the Islamic State, are numerous. They should be diagnosed, and endeavours should be made in order to overcome them.

The most serious of these difficulties are:

1. The presence of the non-Islamic concepts and their invasion of the Islamic world. This is so because the Islamic world - while undergoing a period of decline with the level of thought being low, knowledge scarce and rationality very weak due to its state of decline - was invaded by non-Islamic concepts, which contradict the Islamic concepts and which are based on an erroneous understanding of life both before and after it, in the midst of that state. These concepts found fertile ground free of any resistance and they became deeply rooted, thus the mentality of the Muslims, especially the educated ones, came to be infested by these concepts. A mentality hugely influenced by imitation, therefore, emerged which lacked any sense of creativity and which was unprepared to accept the Islamic ideology politically nor was it able to realise the essence of this ideology, especially the political side of it. It transpires that the Islamic call must therefore be a call to Islam and a call to the resumption of the Islamic way of life; non-Muslims should be called to Islam by demonstrating the Islamic concepts to them and the Muslims should be called to work towards the resumption of the Islamic way of life by properly explaining Islam to them. This would entail divulging the shortcomings of non-Islamic concepts and their dangerous consequences and thus the da'wah should take its political course with endeavours made in order to provide the Ummah with an Islamic culture

where the political aspects would be apparent. This is how the first obstacle would be overcome.

2. The presence of the educational programmes which the colonial powers set up and the method by which these educational systems are implemented in the schools and universities; knowing that those who eventually take up positions in Government, the Administration, the Judiciary, the teaching profession, medicine and students of other professions who graduate from such institutions have adopted a distinctive mentality that works in harmony with the plan which the colonialists have laid down. This is clearly reflected in the ruling system as we see it today whereby the colonial employees were replaced by Muslim ones whose task was (and is) to safeguard the laws, the culture, the policies and the systems which the colonial powers had established, and to defend them as the colonialists did or with even greater vigour. The way to overcome this obstacle would be to divulge these actions to those rulers, civil servants and all the whole people so that the ugly face of colonialism comes to the surface and so that they cease protecting those policies and systems allowing therefore the da'wah to find its way to those Muslims.

3. The continued application of the educational programmes according to the basis which was laid by the unbelieving colonialists, and according to the method which he selected, a matter which made the majority of the graduated young people and those who still in the educational institutes, proceed in a direction contradictory to Islam. We do not mean with the educational programmes the scientific and industrial ones, as these are universal which do not relate to a specific Ummah, but they are universal for all peoples. We mean the cultural programmes which affect the viewpoint towards life, as they are responsible for making the educational programmes stand as an obstacle in the face of resuming the Islamic way of life. These subjects include the history, literature, philosophy and legislation. This is because history is the real explanation of life, and literature is its emotional portrayal, and philosophy is the basic thought upon which the viewpoint towards life is built, and legislation is the practical solutions to life's problems and the tool upon which the organisation of the individuals and communities relationships stands. These are the culture with which the disbelieving colonialist made the mentality of the Muslims sons in a specific way that made some do not feel the necessity of Islam in their life and the life of their Ummah. And it made some of them hostile to Islam, denying its capability to solve the life's problems. Therefore, it is necessary to change this mentality, by culturing the young people outside the schools and universities, in concentrated and public circles, with the Islamic thoughts and the divine rules, so as to overcome this difficulty.

4. Giving some cultural matters, such as sociology, psychology and education science, too much respect and considering them to be universal sciences. Most people recognise these informations (skills) as being scientific and that the facts which these studies establish have come by way of experimentation, as a result they treat them with high regard and they consider the findings of such studies to be indisputable. In so doing they turned to them in order to solve their life's affairs and they taught them in our schools and universities as sciences, as well as implementing them in various aspects of life, and referring to them when solving their problems. Consequently, whatever the psychiatrists, sociologists and educationalists say is taken as a guide and reference ahead of the Qur'an and hadith, and thus we carry today erroneous concepts and viewpoints because we give a lot of respect and admiration for such informations (skills), hence we refer to them in order to solve our problems in life. It has thus become extremely difficult for people to accept anything which contradicts this state of affairs; knowing that it generally leads to the separation of the deen from the temporal life and that it stands in the way of establishing the Islamic State.

The truth of the matter is that those skills cannot be scientific, because they are drawn from observation and inference and they are not based on experimentation. Simply to implement them on people cannot be referred to as experimentation, but merely repetitive observations carried out on different persons in different situations and circumstances, and therefore they are just observations and inferences and nothing like the experiments carried out in laboratories where something is tested or indeed put to the test. Thus they are classified as cultural studies and not science, and besides, the findings are always doubtful with some considerable room for error. Furthermore, these informations (skills) are based on a false premise because they are based on viewing the individual as such and the society also as such, i.e. they are based on the individualistic viewpoint and therefore their vision moves from the individual to the family, to the group and then to society on the basis that society is formed by a group of individuals. This leads to the understanding that societies are split and that what is valid for one society is not necessarily valid for another. In fact society is formed by the human (individual), the concepts, the emotions and the systems, and what is valid for the human in terms of concepts and solutions in one place should be valid for him everywhere else. These concepts and solutions would transform several societies into one single society for which the concepts, emotions and systems would be valid. It is therefore the wrong conception of society which has led to erroneous theories in education and sociology because they are based on that misconception. It is also the wrong conception of society, because it is based on psychology which in turn is false for two reasons: Firstly because it considers the brain as being divided into segments with each of these segments having a distinct function or aptitude and claiming that some brains have certain aptitudes which other brains may not have. The truth of the matter is that the brain is one unit and the disparity of concepts and their difference come as a result of the disparity of things, which are perceptible through the senses, and of the previous information and its variability. There is no aptitude in one brain which is not found in another, but all brains contain the ability to think about every matter whenever the tangible reality, the senses and the previous information, were made available to the brain. Brains however differ in their ability to assess and link, and in the ability and the power of the senses - just like the natural variation in eyesight. It would be possible therefore to feed any person with any type of data and he would have the ability to digest such data; thus the claims which psychologists make about those aptitudes are groundless. Besides, psychology considers the instincts to be numerous, some of which have been discovered and others which are yet to be discovered; some theorists went on to establish false theories based on this concept about the instincts. In reality, if we observe the human reaction one can perceive through one's senses that the human being possesses a vital energy which has two aspects; one which needs to be satisfied, otherwise the human would perish, and the other which needs to be satisfied otherwise the human, although he would survive, would become agitated and troubled. The first one represents the organic needs, such as hunger, thirst and the call of nature, and the second represents the instincts, which are the instinct of spirituality, the instinct of the species and the instinct of survival. These instincts reflect the feeling of weakness, the feeling of the preservation of species and the feeling of survival, and there are no other instincts except these three. Anything other than these three instincts would be merely aspects of these instincts; as for example, fear, supremacy and ownership, which are aspects of the instinct of survival; sanctification and worship, which are aspects of the spiritual instinct; and parenthood and brotherhood, which are aspects of the species instinct. Evidently, psychology's vision of the instincts is false and its claims about the brain are also incorrect, which in turn leads to the falsehood of the theories upon which it is based and consequently to the falsehood of education which has all along been influenced by psychology.

Sociology, educational science and psychology are therefore educational matters which contradict the Islamic ideology and which are in general false. Thus, to continue to hold them in high esteem and to refer to them to solve our problems constitutes an obstacle in the face of working towards establishing the Islamic State. We ought, therefore, to demonstrate that these are merely educational matters and not sciences, and that they are controversial and not established facts. Because they are based on false premises they should not be running our lives, instead Islam should be.

5. Society in the Islamic world leads a non-Islamic way of life and lives according to a pattern which contradicts Islam. This is so because the governmental structure and the ruling system upon which the structure and society are based, as well as the principles upon which society as a whole stands, and the emotional trend which Muslims follow and the intellectual shape on which their way of thinking evolves, all this is based on concepts about life which are alien to the Islamic concepts. As long as these fundamentals remain unchanged and as long as these erroneous concepts are not corrected it would be difficult to change people's way of life in society, and it would be difficult to change the government's structure, the society's basis and the emotional and rational trends which control the Muslims.

6. The wide gap between the Muslims and the Islamic rule, especially in the areas of ruling and financial policies. This makes the Muslims' vision of the Islamic way of life remote, and makes the disbelievers' illustration of the Islamic way of life negative due to the fact that Muslims had witnessed a period during which Islam was not properly implemented on them by the rulers. They also spent about thirty years being ruled by their enemy with a system which contradicted Islam in every department, specifically in the ruling and financial policies. It is therefore imperative that people should realise that this transformation to the Islamic way of life must be comprehensive and not partial, and that the implementation of Islam must be simultaneous and comprehensive, i.e. in one stroke, not gradually or partially or in a patched up manner. This would bring them closer to visualising the reality of life at the times when Islam was mighty.

7. The presence in Muslim countries of governments founded on a democratic basis, implementing the whole of the Capitalist system on the people, having strong political ties with Western countries and founded on localism and division. This makes the task of resuming the Islamic way of life hard to achieve because it cannot be brought about unless it is comprehensive since Islam does not allow Muslim land to be divided into statelets, but commands the unity of the land under one single state. This entails the universality of the da'wah, the efforts and the implementation, which would be met by the resistance of the representatives of these regimes even if they happened to be Muslims. The da'wah should therefore be conducted in every province even if it means enduring difficulties and hardship as a result of opposition from the regimes in the Muslim countries.

8. The presence of a strong public opinion in favour of nationalism, patriotism and socialism together with the rise of political movements based on nationalist, patriotic and socialist ideas. This came about due to the fact that the seizure by the West of Muslim lands, its resuming of power and its implementation of the Capitalist system over the land, triggered the tendency of self defence. This helped the sentiment of nationalism, in order to defend the land, and touched on the raw nerve of racialism and tribalism in self defence and in defence of the family and tribe, and which led to people to work and compete towards gaining the rule on that basis. This led to the rise of some political movements which carried the banner of nationalism to repel the enemy from the land, and others which carried the banner of patriotism in order to confine the rule within the people. Then the corruption and shortcomings of the Capitalist system became flagrant and the call for socialism spread, as a

result groups carrying the banner of socialism were established in order to patch up the Capitalist system. These movements did not have any clear vision of the system of life, their vision was offhand and this led them astray from this principle and from Islam being a universal ideology.

## 48. How the Islamic State Would Rise

The strength of the Islamic thought coupled with its methodology would be sufficient to establish an Islamic State and to resume the Islamic way of life, provided that this thought is deeply rooted in the hearts and deeply embedded in the souls, and provided it materialised itself in the Muslims and became a living Islam working in all walks of life. However, despite all this, some colossal tasks have to be achieved before the existence of the State, and phenomenal efforts must be made in order to resume the Islamic way of life. Desire and optimism would not, therefore, be sufficient for the State to arise, nor would hope and enthusiasm be enough to secure the resumption of the Islamic way of life. The mother of all duties would be to duly assess these colossal obstacles which stand in the way of Islam in order to make their removal possible.

It is also most important to warn the Muslims about the heavy load which awaits those who rise to this objective and to bring to the attention of the people, especially the intellectual ones, the serious consequences of any opinion which is voiced concerning this hugely serious issue, so that words and actions move together with awareness, desire, resoluteness and courage. Those who tread the path in order to resume the Islamic way of life should be aware that they would be carving their way into hard stone, but that with great resolve and dedication they would be able to break the stone. At the same time they should be aware that they would be treating a delicate matter, however, their kindness would help them treat it perfectly. They should be aware that they would clash against major problems, yet they would overcome them. They should not deviate from the path because it is the path which the Messenger of Allah (saw) trod, and if the path is trodden correctly the results would be inevitable and victory would be certain without a shadow of a doubt. It is this path which the Muslims should tread carefully today, provided that the example of the Messenger of Allah (saw) is carefully followed, and his steps carefully and correctly copied so that anyone who treads upon this path does not stumble, because every error in the analogy and every deviation from the path would result in a stumble and introduce sterility into the work. It therefore follows that holding conferences on the issue of the Khilafah would not of itself lead to the establishment of the Islamic State, nor would a federation of countries ruling Muslim peoples be a legitimate method to establish the Islamic State, nor would congresses of Muslim peoples help in the resumption of the Islamic way of life. None of these, nor anything similar to them, should be considered correct, instead they would merely represent rhetoric aimed at soothing the anger of the Muslims. Rather, these would contain their feelings and neutralise their zeal, and consequently lead them astray from the real task, in addition to the fact that they contradict the Islamic method. The only way to establish the Islamic State is to carry the Islamic Message and to work towards the resumption of the Islamic way of life, this necessitates taking the Islamic countries altogether as one unit because the Muslims are but one Ummah, which represents a human group linked by one 'aqeedah from which emanates her system. Any task carried out in any Muslim country, touching on the emotions and concepts, should therefore have its effects in all the other Muslim countries, thus, it is imperative that all Muslim countries be considered as one and that the da'wah is carried to all these countries so that it affects their respective societies. This is because, the one society which represents the Ummah would be like water in a pot, if a fire was lit under it the water would warm up and reach its boiling point, then the boiling would cause the society to move and work. This is why the da'wah should target the Islamic world so that work towards resuming the Islamic way of life could be initiated; this would be done by means of publications of books and leaflets, and by means of communication and all other means of publicity, especially (direct) contacts since they are one of the most successful

methods of da'wah. However, the initiation of da'wah in this open manner is merely a fuel for the society in order to turn the frozen state, which it suffers from, into energy. It cannot reach the boiling point unless the practical da'wah is confined in its political orientation within one single country from where the work would begin. Then the da'wah would be launched from there to mushroom all other parts of the Islamic world. This country, or several countries, would be taken as the support point where the Islamic State would be established, following which work would begin to expand and establish the greater Islamic State, which in turn would carry the Islamic Message to the whole world. This would be just like what the Messenger of Allah (saw) did; he (saw) conveyed his da'wah to all the people and the steps of conveyance reached the practical phase. He (saw) invited the people of Makkah and all the Arabs in the hajj season. His da'wah spread all over the Arabian Peninsula, as if he (saw) had lit a fire under the society of the Peninsula, a fire which was aimed at releasing the energy in the Arabs as a whole. The Messenger of Allah (saw) called the Arabs to Islam by directly contacting them and by inviting them to Islam during the hajj season, and by visiting the tribes in their homes and calling them to Islam. The da'wah reached all the Arabs as a result of the clashes which took place between the Messenger of Allah (saw) and Quraysh, the echoes of those impacts reached the Arabs and triggered their curiosity and their desire to learn more about the da'wah. However, although the da'wah targeted all the Arabs, the scope of the da'wah was confined to Makkah, then it stretched to Madinah until the Islamic State was founded in Hijaz. Only then did the heat of the da'wah and the victory of the Messenger of Allah (saw) cause boiling resulting in real action, so that all believed and the Islamic State grew until it engulfed the whole of the Arabian Peninsula from where it carried its Message to the world.

We ought to adopt the carrying of the da'wah and the work towards resuming the Islamic way of life as our method to establish the Islamic State. We ought to consider, also, all the Muslim countries as one single society and as a target for the da'wah. We must, however, concentrate our scope of work to one province or specific provinces where we undertake to educate people with Islam so that it springs to life within themselves and so that they live by it and for it, and we ought to create public opinion by Islam and for Islam so that a response is generated between the carriers of the da'wah and society, a response which would be fruitful, effective and moving, and which would be able to transform the da'wah into interaction and result in output. Interaction of this nature would be translated into a struggle aimed at establishing the Islamic State, which emanates from the Ummah, in that part of the Islamic world. The da'wah would then have developed from being an idea in the mind to existing in society, and from a popular movement to a State. By then it would have concluded its stages and moved from the starting point to the launching point, and then to the point of support where it would be rooted in the State, which fulfills all elements of the State and the strength of the da'wah. Then the practical task, which Shari'ah commands the State and the Muslims who live outside its authority to fulfill, will have begun. The duty of the State would be to rule comprehensively by that which Allah (swt) has revealed and to make the merging of the other provinces with it or its merger with the other provinces part of its home policies. It would therefore initiate the conveying of the da'wah and the call for the resumption of the Islamic way of life all over the other provinces. It would lift the imaginary political borders which the colonialists drew up between them and who were responsible for making the rulers of those provinces the watchdogs of the borders. The State must therefore remove and cancel the borders even if the other provinces choose not to follow suit. Visas would be canceled, so would the customs checkpoints, and its doors would be left wide open to the citizens of the other provinces. This would make the citizens of the other Muslim provinces feel that this State was indeed an Islamic State, and it would make them witness the implementation and

the execution of the Islamic rule. As for the duty of the Muslims, they should work towards turning their land where Islam is not implemented, and which is considered as Dar al-Kufr, into Dar al-Islam. This would be achieved by aiming to merge their household with the Islamic State by means of da'wah and publicity. This would ensure that the whole of the society within the Islamic world had reached boiling point, which would drive it towards the right action and which would ensure in turn the unification of all the Muslims under the one State. Thus, the greater Islamic State would be established, and so the Islamic State, which represents a universal intellectual leadership, will have come back into existence. By then it will have gained its stature and the weight necessary to enable her to convey its Message and to work towards saving the world from the evils it has been plunged into.

If the Muslim Ummah, had in the past, lived in a country which did not stretch beyond the Arabian Peninsula, and which at that time numbered only a few millions, and despite that when she embraced Islam and carried its Message she represented a world superpower in the face of the two major camps at the time, whereupon she struck them both simultaneously, conquered their lands and spread Islam over almost the whole of the inhabited parts of the world at that time, then what are we to say about the Ummah today - numbering more than one billion, spread over countries that are geographically linked together - if she were a single country, stretching from Marrakesh to India right up to Indonesia, occupying the best part of the world in terms of resources and strategic points, and carrying a single ideology which is the only correct ideology in the world? She would undoubtedly form a front which would be stronger than the two present camps put together, in every domain.

It is therefore the duty of every Muslim to work from this moment on in order to establish the greater Islamic State which would convey the Message of Islam to the world. One's work should start by carrying the Islamic da'wah with the aim of resuming the Islamic way of life in all the Muslim countries; concentrating one's practical scope in one country or some selected ones in order to achieve the point of support so that this serious task can be resumed. Such a cause with its high objective, which the Muslim should aim to achieve by treading this practical and clear path and which he must follow, should be worth enduring all types of hardship and should be worth sparing no effort for. One should rely on Allah's help, seeking no reward for it except to gain the pleasure of Allah (swt).

Al-Hamdu lillahi Rabbil a'alameen.